

苏小暖 著

邪王追妻：

废材逆天小姐

ATIME
WANGJIE



Chapter 601 – Commotion in the Imperial Capital (1)

In fact, this was far from enough. He ought to spoil her rotten, spoiling her until he was the only one under the heavens that could stand her. Only then could it be considered a success, right? Nangong Liuyun rubbed his chin, considering the possibility of carrying out this kind of plan.

It was fortunate he did not say his thoughts out loud, or else, wouldn't he have frightened Ling Feng on the spot till he pissed in his pants?

However, even those words he did speak out loud were enough to frighten Ling Feng to a stop.

Ling Feng was speechless for a long time, he could only silently turn his head away....

Lu Luo, recalling this dialogue, could only helplessly force a smile.

Su Luo cast her a glance: "What are you thinking of?"

So early in the morning and this girl was already daydreaming.

"No, nothing, Miss, quickly freshen up and go outside, His Highness Prince Jin has already waited four hours for you." Lu Luo recalled His Highness Prince Jin warning her not to wake up and tell Su Luo, as a result, she did not dare say a single word.

"Why did you not wake me up?" Su Luo stretched.

"His Highness Prince Jin wouldn't let me, saying that you had cultivated very hard for a period before and seldom rested, so I must not disturb you." Just mentioning His Highness Prince Jin, this girl's pair of eyes would shine.

"He actually is capable of being considerate of others." Su Luo nodded,

somewhat pleased.

Once Su Luo finished freshening up, she directly went out.

Nangong Liuyun was leisurely sitting under the frame that supported the wisteria blossoms in the courtyard. Su Luo had a fish tank installed close to the frame that supported the flowers, inside, she raised a few lively Koi fishes.

At this moment, Nangong Liuyun was holding some fish food, feeding the fishes piece by piece, clearly in high spirits.

Seeing Su Luo come over, Nangong Liuyun abandoned the fish food, stood in place and smilingly watched Su Luo.

In an ink black gown, it contrasted against his skin such that his face was like high-grade jade, graceful and noble.

In the morning light, Su Luo quietly stood there with the morning rays becoming her backlight, giving people a kind of hazy and blurred illusion.

At this moment, she looked like the morning dew under the spring sunshine, giving off a lush, vibrant kind of beauty.

This image of Su Luo made Nangong Liuyun's mind slightly shaken, and also made the corner of his mouth perk up even more into an arc.

Su Luo called out to him: "Let's go, surely His highness the Crown Prince has already waited for a long time."

Nangong Liuyun smilingly nodded his head, holding Su Luo's hands and walked towards the outside.

"You tell me, can the Crown Prince afford his debts?" Su Luo raised her head and looked at Nangon Liuyun.

But the latter appeared to not have heard anything.

His mind was simply not on the Crown Prince.

Holding that slender hand that was soft and smooth as snow-white jade, it made a person's heart all soft and numb.

Nangong Liuyun silently cursed himself for not being mature, just holding her hands was already capable of making his heart hyperactive and having ants

in his pants.

“Nangong Liuyun?” Su Luo added weight to her tone.

“Uh-huh!” Nangong Liuyun made a heavy coughing sound with a deadly earnest appearance. Soon after, he stretched his face repeatedly until it was taut, “What did you say?”

Su Luo speechlessly rolled her eyes: “Do you want to take along a sack or not?”

Nangong Liuyun gave a ‘pfft’ sound, laughing without maintaining his image. He laughingly rubbed Su Luo’s forehead, “Just watching the play is enough, or could it be that you truly think this king will put his princess to work to carry the sack?”

“If we are able to enter the Crown Prince’s treasure storage pavilion, then it would be pretty good.” Su Luo pondered, holding her chin while smiling enigmatically.

The Crown Prince’s vision wasn’t really that great, if he was to let her enter the treasure storage pavilion, relying on the little divine dragon’s ability to find treasures, maybe then, waste would change into treasure.

“You want to enter the Crown Prince’s treasure storage pavilion?” Nangong Liuyun saw that Su Luo was full of expectation, so he indulgently asked her a single sentence.

“Yes, if I was able to enter, then it would truly be the best.” Su Luo’s pair of huge, smart and clear eyes looked upwards, unblinkingly looking at Nangong Liuyun.

Nangong Liuyun, in a spoiling manner, poked her nose: “Since you want to enter, even if there is no opportunity, then this king will create the opportunity to allow you to enter.”

Su Luo suddenly felt that being together with Nangong Liuyun was really not that bad.

Chapter 602 – Commotion in the Imperial Capital (2)

This kind of being cherished and spoiled really felt very comfortable.....

“Nangong Liuyun, I ask you not to treat me so well.” Su Luo said happily and yet hopelessly with a stuffy voice.

“What’s wrong? This king treating you well, you are still not satisfied?” Nangong Liuyun clearly knew why Su Luo had said this sentence, but still he asked away.

His eyes had such an intoxicating smile, the depths of them were as brilliant as the stars, just like this, he lovingly gazed at her.

“Precisely because it’s too good that I would be tangled. If we were to separate in the future, then I will not be very used to it.” Su Luo frowned, beginning to worry about her future self.

She knew that saying these words would make Nangong Liuyun proud of himself, however, she still said it, because she was really worried about her own future.

In Nangong Liuyun’s eyes were full of intoxicating, gentle feelings, and in a spoiling manner, he scraped the tip of her nose, “Then don’t leave, stay by my side forever, I will always protect you, until the end of my life.”

Nangong Liuyun’s heart was extremely happy. It seemed like his great plan to spoil her had begun to show results. However, it was still not enough, he still needed to persist.

Su Luo did not know that Nangong Liuyun still wanted to spoil her rotten, to pamper and indulge her to the degree that nobody would want her in the heavens or on earth. Then in the end, she could only remain by his side.

If she knew Nangong Liuyun's thoughts, she was sure to not know whether to laugh or cry, but she would definitely be moved by Nangong Liuyun's way of thinking.

"Aren't you the kind of iceberg-type handsome man? So grim, proud and aloof when treating others, at this moment, you don't have the slightest resemblance to that. Sweet speech and honeyed words, as if coming naturally from your body's instincts." Su Luo unhurriedly cast Nangong Liuyun a glance.

"Even this, you are still not happy? I only treat you alone well, this is how great of an honor, and yet you still don't pay respect to thank me?" Nangong Liuyun rubbed Su Luo's head.

Su Luo stuck out her tongue: "With you being so experienced, before, you certainly already had a lot of experiences with many girls and thus was able to be so practiced afterwards, right?"

Nangong Liuyun was immensely proud, and shot Su Luo a glance: "In this world, it is called 'self-taught'. However, if it was said like this, isn't Luoluo affirming this king's methods of chasing a wife?"

"What self-taught?" Su Luo smilingly happily said, deliberately avoiding the last part of Nangong Liuyun's question.

Nangong Liuyun pretended to be pitiful and looked at Su Luo: "Then Luo girl, is it possible to give this king a timeline?"

Su Luo unhappily pushed him lightly, gently laughing: "Stop pretending, who are you showing this kind of pitiful appearance to? The most important thing right now is to find the Crown Prince and demand repayment!"

The two people talked, play-fighting and laughing noisily. They headed towards the Crown Prince's Manor, relaxed and satisfied for the entire journey.

Don't know if this time, Nangong Liuyun was trying to show off his fame and power, or something else entirely. Unexpectedly, he brought over a thousand soldiers behind him.

The grandiose group of people took up the entire empty space in front of the Crown Prince's Manor's doorway, making it impenetrable.

Compared to the two people's relaxedness, the Crown Prince's Manor now appeared as if every tree and bush had an enemy soldier, everybody's hearts were anxious.

The Crown Prince had not yet formally taken a wife, therefore, inside the manor, Liangdi Meng had the most respected status.

Normally, it was Liangdi Meng who managed the general business of the manor. As a result, in the current situation where the Crown Prince could not be found, Liangdi Meng was the Crown Prince's Manor's backbone.

However, yesterday, Liangdi Meng was beaten too fiercely by the Crown Prince, and even now was lying down on her bed making groaning noises, completely unable to get up.

Now, the Crown Prince's Manor's steward hurriedly rushed over, urgently saying to the maidservants guarding outside : "Quick quick quick, quickly request Liangdi Meng to come out and welcome the guests."

Cui Lu was Liangdi Meng's personal head maid, and she was currently very dissatisfied with Liangdi Meng's bitter experience. Seeing the steward acting this way.....

Chapter 603 – Commotion in the Imperial Capital (3)

Cui Lu then said with a frown: “Steward Xu, in the end, who is it, that is worth you acting like this? Liangdi Meng’s body is unwell, it’s not like you don’t know. The imperial physician already made it clear, within seven days, she is not allowed out of the bed, otherwise.....”

Steward Xu waved his hand to interrupt the maid’s words, nearly stomping his foot in annoyance: “His Highness Prince Jin! His Highness Prince Jin is leading a large amount of people and is majestically walking over to our Manor, reportedly coming to collect a debt! Since the Crown Prince is not present at the moment, there is no one to take charge of this situation. No matter how heavily Liangdi Meng was injured, she still needs to get up!”

“Collect a debt?” Before Cui Lu had time to react, Liangdi Meng had already rushed out with clothing draped on, “Who did you say had came to collect the debt?”

Because the injury from yesterday was quite serious, as a result, Liangdi Meng’s steps were unsteady, with her figure swaying and nearly tumbling down.

Cui Lu hurriedly rushed towards her, lending an arm to support Liangdi Meng and not letting her fall.

“Yes, I heard it was to collect a debt ah!” Steward Xu’s entire forehead was filled with sweat, so anxious as to run around in a circle.

Liangdi Meng’s heart also followed and became very anxious.

Yesterday, the Crown Prince’s reaction was so intense, it was clear that he certainly owed a huge debt.....Could actually move his Highness Prince Jin to personally visit, this debt..This debt, even if he wanted to avoid it, he couldn’t

ah.

Liangdi Meng clenched her teeth: “Where is His Highness the Crown Prince?” Having such a huge matter occur, could it be that he was really hiding?

“Don’t know ah.” Steward Xu was also extremely anxious.

“How can you not know? Don’t the gates to the manor all have people guarding it?” Yesterday, when the Crown Prince left, he clearly went out and immediately returned.

Steward Xu was so anxious that he was grabbing his hair: “This old servant is also bewildered ah, there were no records of the Crown Prince leaving at the gate, and also, all directions are guarded by His Highness Prince Jin’s people... Even if wings were inserted to the Crown Prince, he would still have a difficult time flying ah. However, he has just disappeared!”

Liangdi Meng’s figure was unsteady, nearly falling down.

Cui Lu’s eyes were alert and her hands were quick, grabbing onto the tottering Liangdi Meng. In Cui Lu’s heart, she became increasingly more disapproving of the Crown Prince’s doings.

In a flash, Liangdi Meng understood right away, that there was a secret passageway in the Crown Prince’s Manor. The Crown Prince had already used this secret passageway to flee long ago to escape the debt.

The debt he caused, he himself ran away quickly, leaving behind this rotten butt crap of stuff for her, a woman, to bear. Was this still the stately Crown Prince of a nation, so irresponsible like this. If he was to ascend the throne, wouldn’t the common people under his jurisdiction be in the midst of an abyss of suffering?

However, Liangdi Meng hadn’t thought that far, she only knew, that she was already quite disdainful of the Crown Prince!

At the moment, a small servant boy hurriedly ran over: “Not good, not good, His Highness Prince Jin broke in!”

Steward Xu was both depressed and anxious: “Didn’t I order you guys earlier to stop him?”

“Steward Xu, we tried blocking him ah, but this, of course, is His Highness Prince Jin ah! With one wave of his, a huge group of our people would fall down right away, this, this, how could we block him ah!” The small servant boy said, having the feeling of being extremely wronged.

Other people were easy to block but His Highness Prince Jin.....That awe-inspiring person who was more formidable than ten Crown Princes, who dared to block him.....

Steward Xu was also out of methods, he could only helplessly hand over the major responsibility to Liangdi Meng: “Liangdi Meng, we need you to manage this huge situation ah.....”

She had enjoyed a happy, joyful and luxurious life in the Crown Prince’s Manor for several years, and tyrannically abused several of the Crown Prince’s Imperial Concubines in-name-only for several years, this responsibility ought to be carried by her, right?

Recalling that firm, cruel method of cutting down people that His Highness Prince Jin had..... Liangdi Meng’s figure swayed, almost directly fainting away.....

Fortunately, Steward Xu’s mind was meticulously shrewd, he yelled in a loud voice: “Liangdi Meng, according to His Highness Prince Jin’s temperament, if the main host doesn’t go out, I’m afraid that the whole Crown Prince’s Manor will be torn apart by him.”

Chapter 604 – Commotion in the Imperial Capital (4)

When the time comes, you still need to force yourself to get up. Therefore now, she should stop pretending to be dizzy.

Liangdi Meng's half-collapsed body swayed some more, with great difficulty, she struggled up. She had one hand supporting her forehead and weakly said to Cui Lu: "Help me go dress and freshen up."

She instructed Steward Xu again: "First, you go back to the lobby and hold them off, don't really let him tear apart the Crown Prince's Manor."

If His Highness Prince Jin became infuriated, there was nothing he would not do.

Seeing that Liangdi Meng had agreed, only now, with her as the pillar Steward Xu braced himself and left.

Only, while he was walking, he also cursed the Crown Prince in his heart. It was clearly he who brought about this disaster. Why was it that he didn't even have the courage to assume this responsibility?

When Steward Xu arrived, that noble and insufferably arrogant His Highness Prince Jin was already sitting on the red sandalwood chair, comfortably and leisurely having tea and refreshments.

Seeing Steward Xu come in, Nangong Liuyun didn't even bother to look up.

"Paying my respects to Your Highness Prince Jin." Steward Xu respectfully saluted with both knees kneeling on the ground.

In fact, he only needed to bow in salute. But seeing such a calm, composed and enigmatic His Highness Prince Jin, Steward Xu's heart was really afraid.

“Tell Nangong Liujue to come out.” Nangong Liuyun unhurriedly placed the teacup on the table.

“The Crown Prince, he...he..” Sweat was starting to pour out of Steward Xu’s forehead.

Even though His Highness Prince Jin merely said a simple, short question, but that powerful pressure and innate domineering respect of an expert that his entire body emitted, made Steward Xu’s heart beat like a drum continuously.

“Yeah?” Nangong Liuyun’s tone seemed to be understated.

But, it scared Steward Xu until his heart was quivering violently.

This atmosphere was too strong, even when he was facing his Majesty the Emperor, he was never this afraid.

Steward Xu hummed and hawed: “His Highness the Crown Prince, he, he went out to visit a friend.”

“Bang!” a loud sound echoed, that sturdy table was immediately slapped into fine powder.

Steward Xu’s heart had a sudden violent burst, nearly fainting away.

Some of the servants at the side directly fainted.

Nangong Liuyun’s face was hazed over, voice sinisterly deep and dripping with blood. “Yesterday, this king already had someone give him the news. Now, you are telling this king that he went out and even went to see his friend?”

Steward Xu wanted to say something but felt as if his throat was squeezed by two hands and couldn’t spit out a single word.

His figure was trembling even more fiercely.

The other servants, seeing the normally despotic and insufferably arrogant, Steward Xu being frightened to this degree, each and every one of them kept even more quiet out of fear. Their bodies were stiff, not even daring to breathe.

Now, Liangdi Meng had already reached the back of this scene and was scared frozen to the spot by the sound that Nangong Liuyun made.

“Get the f*ck out of here by the order of this king!” Nangong Liuyun’s long

sleeves flipped over, a huge wind attacking towards where Liangdi Meng stood.

The gale stopped, and Liangdi Meng's fallen down, sorry figure had already appeared in front of Nangong Liuyun.

Seeing Liangdi Meng's, that serious injured face, Su Luo secretly laughed in her heart, but on the surface, she pretended to reproach Nangong Liuyun: "Don't you have any tender feelings for the fairer sex?"

Nangong Liuyun's furious hazed over face, when he looked down towards Su Luo, it was tender and soft: "This king only has tender feelings for the fairer sex towards you."

"Cough, cough, in such a public place, with so many people, be a little more proper." Su Luo gave him a light push.

But this scene of Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo that suddenly occurred, immediately shocked all the people within the hall into dumbfoundedness!

Just a moment ago...They didn't see it incorrectly, right? That man smiling with his whole face full of gentle feelings with honeyed meanings, was really that overbearing, arrogant His Highness Prince Jin from a moment ago?

This was unreasonable!

Just when everyone was feeling incredulous disbelief, His Highness Prince Jin had already changed back, in an instant, to that overbearing person. His cold eyes gave off an imposing manner of annihilating everyone across the board.

Chapter 605 – Commotion in the Imperial Capital (5)

Everyone took a glance at Su Luo, their hearts were all mixed, displaying various emotions.

This fourth Miss Su had come to the Crown Prince's Manor once before. The her at that time was like a country bumpkin entering a big city, cowering, timid and weak. Even they, as servants, dared to laugh at her in front of her face.

But now, times had changed, in these circumstances, now they were being forced and threatened.

Such an insufferably arrogant His Highness Prince Jin giving off an overbearing aura, could still be so gentle and tender to her. This simply made people lament that the affairs of life were so fickle.

One could see Liangdi Meng struggle to crawl up, lifting her head. Her entire face was so badly battered that it was too horrible a sight to endure.

“Huh, the injuries on your face, it was from yesterday, right?” The tip of Su Luo's brow lifted slightly, her eyes contained a smile that was not quite one, the twinkle in the depth of her eyes glittering brilliantly.

Liangdi Meng's hand at her side were clenched into fists, her solar plexus felt even more as if a huge stone was blocking it, oppressing and smothering her. It was pressing down until she felt it was extremely difficult to bear.

The Su Luo that was originally not as good as her, nowadays, was nestled against His Highness Prince Jin's side, someone who she wanted but could not climb up in status to him.

Whereas she who was originally up high and looked down at Su Luo with

contempt and disdain, now looked like the prisoner under the stairs. She looked extremely wretched standing in front of them, much lower than them.

Such a huge disparity caused Liangdi Meng's complexion to blush a deep red. Her pair of eyes were like two torches that were ignited into burning infernos, staring fixedly at Su Luo. She wished she could tear Su Luo into pieces.

Whereas the latter person contentedly had her arms looped together, leisurely raising an eyebrow and smiling full of self-satisfaction. How effortlessly relaxed was that manner.

This smile of Su Luo's aroused the fury in Liangdi Meng's heart even more.

"What did you come here to do? Is the Crown Prince's manor a place you want to come and can come?" Liangdi Meng angrily rebuked Su Luo.

Su Luo smilingly looked at her, a wicked sneer perking up on her face: "Crown Prince's Manor? So great and impressive, so much red tape, that even a huge creditor cannot drop in for a visit to demand payment?"

Su Luo turned her gaze towards Nangong Liuyun: "Does our Eastern Ling Empire have this kind of law?"

"If the Crown Prince can draw up national laws, then it might not be impossible." Nangong Liuyun faintly smiled.

These words were slapped down, really was punishing to the heart.

Only His Majesty the emperor had the power to draw up national laws, didn't these words by His Highness Prince Jin imply that the Crown Prince had thoughts of replacing the emperor?

Liangdi Meng's heart was frenetic, and she hurriedly smiled obsequiously: "Your Highness Prince Jin is joking, this, how can this be possible?"

"Call the Crown Prince to come out." Nangong Liuyun's eyes turned slightly cold, from his chest pocket, he took out a piece of paper that was a receipt for a debt and placed it on top of the table.

Seeing this, Su Luo's quick-witted, beautiful eyes narrowed quickly then passed. She also took out a sheet of paper that was a receipt for a debt from her sleeves and placed hers together with Nangong Liuyun's.

Nangong Liuyun lifted an eyebrow slightly towards Steward Xu. Steward Xu's heart suddenly contracted, but his body, still trembling and faltering, stood up. He fetched those receipts for the debt and merely swept a glance at it, before both of his eyes flipped over. He nearly passed out.

Steward Xu, trembling, used both hands to place those two pieces of loan receipts in Liangdi Meng's hands. He simply did not dare to look straight at Liangdi Meng's pair of inquiring eyes.

Liangdi Meng saw Steward Xu being frightened to such a degree, and her heart already had a bad premonition. But, she still resolutely received those two pieces of debt receipts.

The top one belonged to His Highness Prince Jin.

One thousand five hundred pieces of green-colored crystal stones?!

Both of Liangdi Meng's legs trembled, nearly sinking to her knees.

Her eyes determinedly, meticulously and carefully examined each and every one of those numbers. She counted this a few times, those numbers were still one thousand and five hundred.

"This, this is impossible..." Liangdi Meng stammered and repeatedly shook her head.

Oh heavens, one thousand and five hundred pieces, even if the Crown Prince was cut into pieces and sold, it would still not fetch this price.

Behind it was still another piece of debt receipt that ought to be Su Luo's.

Liangdi Meng thought to herself, Su Luo, that loathsome girl, was so poor that she couldn't even afford clothing to wear, how could she have stuff to loan to the Crown Prince?

Chapter 606 – Commotion in the Imperial Capital (6)

If they had some, then it only needed to cover the debt to His Highness Prince Jin.

Holding on to this kind of thought, Liangdi Meng opened her eyes to look at the second sheet of loan receipt.

One thousand five hundred pieces of crystal stones?

The Crown Prince also owed Su Luo one thousand five hundred pieces of green-colored crystal stones???

Immediately, Liangdi Meng's face turned green.

Liangdi Meng stood in a daze at her original spot and also then withdrew back three steps. She lifted her eyes, her pupils opened wide, and stared at these two people in front of her with disbelief.

“This...how can this be possible?” She uttered in a mumbling voice.

“It's clearly written in black and white, if you don't believe it, just call the Crown Prince out to confirm it.” Su Luo collected the loan receipt from her hand, and said with a smile that was not quite a smile.

“The Crown Prince...His Highness the Crown Prince is not here. Like Steward Xu said, he went out, therefore...this debt, it's better if you guys come another day to ask for it.”

A full three thousand pieces of crystal stones, even if funds were embezzled from the national treasury to their private funds, it's still not enough to pay back this debt.

Therefore, Liangdi Meng simply just threw down the pot that was already

broken.

Nangong Liuyun's phoenix eyes narrowed dangerously, as he calmly asked: "Really not here?"

"Indeed, he is not here!" Liangdi Meng took a deep breath, with head high and chest out, giving herself some courage.

"Very good." Nangong Liuyun stood up, and swept the surroundings once and cast a glance at Liangdi Meng. The corner of his mouth hooked into a sinister and treacherous smile.

"This kind of Crown Prince, how can he assume the heavy responsibility of a nation? In the future, how can you ask a person to feel reassured at handing over the entire Eastern Ling empire into his hands? It seems that this king must discipline him well on behalf of our father the emperor."

Afterwards, without saying anything further, he grabbed Su Luo's hand and just walked out.

Liangdi Meng's heart was shocked.

His Highness Prince Jin grandiosely came bringing a bunch of people with him, how could he leave here again so easily? In the end, what was he planning to do following this? How could they so easily just leave?

Liangdi Meng's heart had a very bad premonition, her heart jumped with 'ba-thump, ba-thump' sounds. Her footsteps unconsciously followed behind Nangong Liuyun to walk out.

Nangong Liuyun led Su Luo out by the hand, then halted in front of the wide plaza of the Crown Prince's Manor's gate.

In the middle of the crowd, His Highness Prince Jin started to give a speech.

His words were concise and to the point, it summed up the intent of his heart, just this kind of short speech: "Trained an army for thousands of days just to use it in one moment, starting from today, this king orders all of you guys to wander around the imperial capital, you guys can do as you please. Whoever can force the Crown Prince to come out, this king will award him with one hundred pieces of green-colored crystal stones."

One hundred pieces of green-colored crystal stones ah...Liangdi Meng, who was hiding behind them, felt her heart suddenly sank, His Highness Prince Jin was really generous.

As for those words that Nangong Liuyun said before, she didn't put it into her heart. From her point of view, since the Crown Prince had already hid away, mostly likely, he would not be found.

When those soldiers heard Nangong Liuyun's words, immediately, every one of them started to cheer!

His Highness Prince Jin had always tolerated the Crown Prince to a degree, causing them who obviously had the strength, to eat defeat in front of the Crown Prince's guards.

But now, His Highness had said that no matter what they did, these words were simply like an order while giving them amnesty.

"Did you hear clearly what was said?" Nangong Liuyun's phoenix eyes narrowed slightly, his imposing manner was vigorous.

"Loud and clear!" The crowd of guards all had their heads high and chest out, replying uniformly.

"Dismissed." Nangong Liuyun waved his hand. Those guards immediately scattered into the bustling imperial capital, like birds and beasts in the mountain.

Nangong Liuyun's guards, were all at least at or above the third rank.

A guard at the third rank was not considered much, but one thousand guards at the third rank, now that was terrifying.

These one thousand guards at the third rank scattered in the imperial capital, suddenly causing serious effects in the bustling imperial capital.

However, their goal was very explicit, specializing in executing destruction on industries owned by the Crown Prince.

Chapter 607 – Lighting up fires and looting

(1)

As to which industries the Crown Prince held in his hand, and who helped the Crown Prince take care of it, to Nangong Liuyun's intelligence network, that was simply too easy.

In one afternoon's time, the industries that the Crown Prince owned sustained heavy damage.

Even more stores that were not actually under the Crown Prince's name but acted on his behalf were all ransacked or looted.

First, were those auction houses located at the city's center, these places were the first to suffer a calamity.

The auction house was packed with people, when the hammer was just about to land, a group of people grandiosely rushed in.

Everyone in the auction house was struck dumb, what were they doing?

But before they could react, they discovered that the stuff being auctioned were all carried away, even the trays they were on.

"Hey! Who are you guys? Do you know who is behind this auction house? People come, stop them!"

The boss of the auction house loudly yelled.

However, he had just spoken when he discovered that the crowd of people had rushed up. They madly beat him up, issuing slapping and punching sounds!

"Stop, stay your hands, stop!" The auction house's boss angrily shouted.

But the Crown Prince's name, they simply had no fear of it.

There were about fifty people that came, each and every one of them was aggressive and fiendish. In broad daylight, they grabbed stuff and still left behind some fierce words: “Want the stuff back, tell Nangong Liujué to come and get it himself!”

This arrogant and despotic manner, directly shocked the boss of the auction house, freezing him to the spot.

Boss Ren very quickly returned to his senses, “What nonsense are you guys saying? Our auction house doesn’t have even a bit of relationship to the Crown Prince.” His Highness the Crown Prince had instructed before, his investment must not be leaked out. As a result, the boss of the auction house hurriedly denied it.

“Whether there is or isn’t a relationship, your words don’t count!” This captain of the looting team directly waved his hand: “Brothers, carry away everything in this auction house. Anything that cannot be moved, smash it!”

Consequently, the group of grandiose people very quickly flocked towards the auction house’s underground warehouse.

The people from the auction house were completely unable to stop them. Whenever they stepped forward to stop them, they would be knocked out from being hit by a club.

The situation was overwhelmingly one-sided.

Now, a group of people sitting in the hall looked at each other in dismay. Their hearts were somewhat terrified and were all panic-stricken about whether the sky was about to change in the imperial capital.

The captain of the first looting team stood on top of the stage, heroically waving his hand. A huge number of folded papers dropped out of the sky, spilling amongst the crowd.

This captain of the first squadron had ample imposing manner: “Everyone, don’t panic. Because the Crown Prince Nangong Liujué owed His Highness Prince Jin a huge debt and refused to pay it back, we were forced and with no other choice but to come personally to take it back. This has nothing to do with everyone. Everybody, keep calm and don’t get excited. With everyone going their

own way, then nothing will happen to them. If anyone dares to take advantage of this confusion for personal gain, then don't blame us from Prince Jin's Royal Manor for being impolite!"

This kind of speech was powerful, combined with kindness, it gave his words substance, placating every heart that was uneasy and agitated.

Originally, some really did have thoughts of profiting from others' misfortune through looting. But when this captain brought out the name Prince Jin's Royal Manor, all of them would not dare to move.

Immortal gods come to blows, being able to watch from the side was fine with them. If they were to mix in and participated, then they would just end up being cannon fodder.

This captain of the looting squadron was very satisfied with everyone's behavior. With both hands linked behind his back, he unhurriedly examined each of the auction items. It was packed into boxes and he ordered people to carry it away.

After emptying out this auction house, the group of people once again grandiosely charged into the next auction house.

And matters that were similar to this were staged again and again in the districts of the bustling imperial capital. There was even a huge group of gossiping people that directly followed behind the looting squadron to watch this play.

The first to suffer a calamity was the auction house. The second to suffer a calamity were those dozen or so manors and courtyards under the Crown Prince's name.

Chapter 608 – Lighting up fires and looting

(2)

The Crown Prince sought the pleasures of life, his courtyard mansions were built sumptuously, in the best district of the entire city.

In this kind of a district, only high officials and nobles comes and goes.

Even these high officials and nobles who wanted to purchase a house in the best district with the most expensive land, also found it extremely difficult.

Because once this kind of residence was placed on the market, there would be countless people trying to snatch it right away, thus raising the price.

The final sale price would often make people's heartbeat speed up.

But at this moment, the most gorgeously built residences in these districts, were set on fire by lots of bright torches.

The residences that made countless people look up at, now were being mercilessly engulfed by a large fire. The flames soared, dark smoke curling up.

The group of people that set the fire were like fiends with an imposing and threatening manner. Nobody dared to approach, they could only stand far in the distance, pointing the fingers of blame.

“Oh heavens, isn't this one of His Highness Crown Prince's residence? How dare someone set it on fire? Even more, they so brazenly did it? Don't they want to live?”

“You don't know a damn thing! Do you know the person that set it on fire? That is His Highness Prince Jin, now, you tell me, does he dare to or not?”

“His Highness Prince Jin? How can this be.....”

“I heard the Crown Prince owed His Highness Prince Jin three thousand green-colored crystal stones, couldn’t repay this debt and disappeared. His Highness Prince Jin is using this kind of vengeful manner to look for the Crown Prince!”

“So it’s actually like this…… His Highness Prince Jin is worthy of being His Highness Prince Jin, he can even think of this kind of peculiar way to look for people.”

“Indeed! The Crown Prince can owe anyone else and it will be fine, but he owed a debt to His Highness Prince Jin, of all people. Did he really believe that our Highness Prince Jin was like clay that could be shaped by him?”

“Exactly, burning these residences, does it even count? It’s better to also burn down the Crown Prince’s official residence!”

Among the people, His Highness Prince Jin’s reputation was always celebrated. By comparison, His Highness Crown Prince was dull without any light.

Because of the constant, heartfelt worship for His Highness Prince Jin, the public opinion would overwhelmingly lean towards Nangong Liuyun.

When Su Luo, who was hidden among the crowd while watching this play, heard these people’s comments, she couldn’t help shaking her head with a forced smile.

That the matter of looting and plundering could be praised and approved like this since time immemorial, it could have only happened because of Nangong Liuyun, right?

Su Luo really couldn’t understand.

According to Nangong Liuyun’s cruel, arrogant and untamed nature with volatile mood swings that’s brutal and reeking of blood, the masses ought to only respect him from a distance. At least, he should be regarded as the existence of a baby crying at night.

However, reality was quite the opposite.

No matter how bloody Nangong Liuyun’s behaviour was, or how excessively far he took it, people would still praise him to the heavens.

In their eyes, everything His Highness Prince Jin did was right, if it was wrong,

then definitely, it was the other party's fault. This kind of incomparable and unconditional trust, in the end, how did it come about? Su Luo was extremely curious about it.

The entire imperial capital were all stirred up, then where was the Crown Prince from the party that was involved?

This conversation must start in the wee hours of the morning.

At that time, the Crown Prince was pacing in his room. He paced and paced, suddenly thinking of that time when he built the Crown Prince's Manor. He had built a secret passageway underneath his study that led to the imperial palace.

This secret passageway, outside of he, himself, even the emperor didn't know about it.

At that time, the Crown Prince's eyes lit up and directly selected to escape.

It seemed to him, Nangong Liuyun was a person who valued his face very much, so if he wasn't there, then Nangong Liuyun wouldn't make a huge disturbance over this matter. Then, this matter would be settled by leaving it unsettled.

Therefore, at that time, he had fled without the slightest hesitation.

However, what he didn't know, was that this time, the person who provoked this hatred happened to be Liangdi Meng, who he had favored the most from before.

Thousands, no, ten thousands of should not, this Liangdi Meng should not have offended Su Luo.

Nangong Liuyun never held a grudge, because if he had a hatred, he naturally would avenge it on the spot.

But, if someone dared to offend his treasured Luo Luo, then, it wouldn't be as simple as avenging a hatred. This hatred would also bring disaster to their relatives.

Chapter 609 – Lighting up fires and looting

(3)

Liangdi Meng had wield the Crown Prince's power to do foolish things, naturally, it would bring calamity onto the Crown Prince's body.

Therefore, this time, the Crown Prince really could not escape this calamity.

In the Anning (1) palace section of the imperial palace.

The empress sat in her honored seat, wearing the phoenix crown that was surrounded by green beads of jade. She was enigmatically holding and drinking a cup of fragrant tea.

The Crown Prince's head shrunk back and cowered as he stood beneath her. Occasionally, he would lift up his eyes to very cautiously observe the Empress's expression.

"You tell me, how much do you owe the second child?" The Empress's voice seemed to have come from a deep valley, floating in from a vast distance.

"One, one thousand five hundred pieces." The Crown Prince, somewhat upset, stamped his feet.

One thousand five hundred pieces...The Empress's expression did not seem worried, her gloomy cold eyes were like arrows shooting towards him, "How did you owe him so much?"

"I ..." The Crown Prince wanted to say something but hesitated.

"Just this one thousand five hundred pieces?" The Empress's ice-cold gaze stared fixedly at the Crown Prince.

"No...Still have the one owed to Su Luo....One thousand, one thousand five hundred pieces...." In his lifetime, the Crown Prince had never been as

humiliated as he was now.

“Su Luo?” A trace of suspicion flashed across the Empress’s dignified face, “Which Su Luo?”

“Just that...” The Crown Prince lifted his gaze to glance at the Empress on tenterhooks, then, his head hung down again from being upset, “Besides that Su Luo, who else could it be?”

Naturally, the Empress knew about Su Luo because Su Luo was the Crown Prince’s fiancée for around ten years. The Empress naturally loathed Su Luo to an indescribable degree.

Now, hearing that the Crown Prince owed Su Luo one thousand five hundred pieces of crystal stones, she was simply incredulous.

“How is this possible? In the end, what happened, you will tell it to me in full detail without leaving anything out, at once and thoroughly!” The Empress’s expression was like condensed ice, with eyes bursting with flames.

The Crown Prince felt that this was extremely humiliating, but was also afraid that the Empress, in a rage, would not help him settle this debt. Therefore, he summoned up the courage to tell the Empress what happened that day at the Purple Fish Palace in as few words as possible.

However, when he was speaking, he especially emphasized how overbearing and strong Nangong Liuyun was. How treacherous and deceitful Su Luo was, and he, himself, was merely as clean, pure and innocent as a white lotus flower.

The Empress’s cold expression condensed into frost: “After you withdrew the engagement to that loathsome girl, it seemed as if she was reborn? It really is hard for a person to believe.”

Su Luo was originally the Empress’s future daughter-in-law, the Empress naturally knew of her existence.

But in the past, she had always treated Su Luo like empty air and always looked down upon her. However now, hearing what the Crown Prince said about this girl actually having such good luck.

The Crown Prince recalled that day when he broke off the engagement, Su

Luo's actions and words were neither obsequious nor servile, and his brows knotted even more tightly: "Before I broke off our engagement, I think she was already reborn."

"Now you are regretting it?" The Empress very unhappily sent a glare towards the Crown Prince.

The Empress also knew, over these last few years, the Crown Prince's attitude towards Su Luo was always full of disgust.

"I..." Recalling how agile, clever and astute Su Luo was, recalling her intimacy with Nangong Liuyun from before, the Crown Prince's heart was filled with disgust.

Seeing this kind of expression on the Crown Prince's face, how could the Empress not understand?

"It's a pity there is no medicine on this earth for regret! Now, she is fooling around with Nangong Liuyun, even if she looked back to seek you out, you are not allowed to want her again!" The Empress sent him a glare.

Ever since that loathsome girl defeated Su Qing, for the moment, she was in the limelight with no one to steal her shine. Her sex scandal with Nangong Liuyun raised even more of a stink. Even though the Empress never left the Imperial harem, she still knew about everything clearly.

The Crown Prince's head dropped down dejectedly.

Who could have anticipated that that good-for-nothing waste, in less than half a year's time, would instantly become a super gifted person? Who could have known that God would care so much for her, that her luck was good to such a degree?

1) Anning is translated as peaceful, tranquil etc... into English. So this section is the Peaceful palace in the imperial palace.

Chapter 610 – Lighting up fires and looting

(4)

If he had known earlier that Su Luo would emerge so abruptly, he absolutely would not have broken off the engagement.

The Empress calmly held the blue and white porcelain teacup, the forefinger that had a long, slender fingernail carelessly pushed aside the tea leaves in the porcelain cup.

“Mother Empress, what can your son, this official, do? These three thousand green-colored crystal stones, even if you kill this son, still won’t be able to take it out! You must help your son, this official!” The Crown Prince depressedly pulled at his hair, squatting on the ground. He appeared dispirited and in a difficult situation.

If he had know earlier that this was going to happen, at that time, he would not have been so hot-headed as to bet with them.

Just betting with Su Luo was fine, but he insisted on falling down twice in the same place. The second time, he lost again to Nangong Liuyun.

Unexpectedly, the corner of the Empress’s lips hooked into a cold smile: “It’s nothing more than one thousand five hundred green-colored crystal stones, why so worried?”

“Isn’t it three thousand, thousand...” The Crown Prince’s voice came to a stop, how did it change into one thousand five hundred pieces all of a sudden?

The Empress coldly smiled: “If the debt is not returned to the second child, then he will indeed be troublesome, so we still need to carefully consider that side. As for that loathsome girl, if she dares to demand payment from you? Ask her to come see this Empress.”

The Empress's action was a model of picking on the pushover to pinch.

The Su Luo in her impression was still that good-for-nothing, love-struck fool, weak and daughter of a concubine at Su Manor from that time.

The Crown Prince, having heard this, he somewhat awkwardly said: "Mother Empress, there is something you don't know, second brother treats that Su Luo extraordinarily different. He certainly will stand out to help Su Luo demand repayment of the debt."

"What kind of vision does the second child have, how could he fancy a loathsome girl that even you don't want?" The Empress smiled confidently, "Him treating that girl well, is merely to make you angry and nothing more."

The Empress was very certain of this.

No matter how good Su Luo became, how much better could she have gotten? What kind of vision did Nangong Liuyun have? As long as he was not blind, he was definitely just toying with Su Luo. He was not really going to marry her to make her his princess.

"This...however, their relationship is really intimate." The Crown Prince's intuition felt something was amiss.

He had contact with them face-to-face, Nangong Liuyun's pampering and spoiling of Su Luo clearly didn't seem to be an act.

"Haha." The Empress coldly laughed repeatedly, "Just because it is this way, is the reason your Mother Empress is so certain. Nangong Liuyun is merely toying with Su Luo and nothing more. You think about it, if he really liked someone, he would immediately marry her and bring her home. This kind of procrastination can be regarded as what sort of reasoning?"

The pitiful Empress, how could she have known that it was not Nangong Liuyun who didn't want to marry Su Luo. Nangong Liuyun was only too eager to marry Su Luo and get her home to hide her away.

But, the problem was, Su Luo wanted to enjoy the pleasure of being chased, how could she so easily let herself be married off? The real person who did not agree to this was Su Luo.

“As for the second child’s crystals stones, Mother Empress will get your father to personally step in. Just say that this was merely a joke among brothers.” The Empress did not feel that this matter was all that troublesome.

“This way is really okay?” The Crown Prince was somewhat disbelieving, this could really be so easily resolved?

“Don’t tell me that the second child will insist on demanding these crystal stones from you? You, however, are the Crown Prince, the future master of this empire. What can Nangong Liuyun be considered compared to you?” The Empress glanced at the Crown Prince with certainty.

The Crown Prince originally was very afraid of Nangong Liuyun, but being told by the Empress of these facts, he suddenly felt that there was nothing about Nangong Liuyun to be afraid of.

What Mother Empress said was not wrong, in the future, this entire empire will be his. Why would Nangong Liuyun even dare to ask him for the crystal stones?

The Empress coldly shot the Crown Prince a glance: “You ah, just don’t have enough self-confidence. Also, you are not too tough, so often would always be pressed down by Nangong Liuyun’s imposing manner. In the future, you must remember, in front of Nangong Liuyun, you must keep your head high and chest out for me!”

Chapter 611 – Lighting up fires and looting

(5)

The Crown Prince's heart was immediately ignited, and he patted his chest until it resounded with booming sounds: "Right! I am the Crown Prince, I am the true and only future master of this empire, Nangong Liuyun counts as nothing but a fart!"

Just when the mother and son were conversing, suddenly, the sound of hurried footsteps from outside could be heard.

A young court eunuch in the dark blue-colored court eunuch clothes ran in, crying out in alarm: "Your Highness Crown Prince, something incredibly bad has occurred!"

The Crown Prince's heart skipped a beat, he had a very bad promotion.

He, who was originally full of confidence, now, a touch of fear flashed through his eyes.

The Empress remained calm and unperturbed sitting in the crown seat, with a stiff, ice-cold face, she said: "If you have something to say, say it slowly, what could be so urgent?"

That court eunuch gasped until his breath evened out, and then hastily said: "Reporting back to the Empress, an incredibly bad event has occurred, the several residences under His Highness Crown Prince's name, have all been lit on fire and burned until they were all gone!"

"What?" The Crown Prince immediately stood up, his face filled with a shocked expression.

Those several residences of his, were not just some ordinary residences. Each and every one of those residences that were constructed had a huge price

tag. The most important matter was that, from the outside, they looked like residences, but inside, they were warehouses where he stored a lot of treasures ah..... The more the Crown Prince thought, the more anxious he became, wishing he could immediately grow wings to fly over there!

“Yes, that’s right, it’s not limited to this today. It is being reported that the imperial capital is in quite a disorder. In order to find your Highness the Crown Prince, His Highness Prince Jin created huge sounds of activity in the city.”

“This..... These are all Nangong Liuyun’s doings?” The Crown Prince was immediately stunned, losing his head out of fear as he looked towards the Empress.

Just a minute ago, he was encouraged by the Empress’s words, with his confidence swelling. But now, hearing this news, immediately, like a punctured ball, he deflated.

The Empress saw the Crown Prince’s behavior, and a thread of displeasure flashed through her eyes. She frowned, finally saying only an indifferent, short sentence: “Go out to take a look.”

Standing on the imperial palace’s highest bright moon stairs, the entire imperial capital was plainly visible.

Even though it was a huge distance away, you could still vaguely see it clearly.

Seeing the flames soaring into the sky where all the residences were located, the Crown Prince’s face immediately turned ashen. His hands at his side clenched tightly into fists, clearly, he was already extremely furious.

That’s right, they were all his houses!

Nangong Liuyun, I will kill you!!! The Crown Prince furiously clenched his fists, both of his eyes scarlet red. He was itching to rush up to Nangong Liuyun and smash him down with one fist strike.

“Mother Empress, didn’t you say that second brother would not.....” The Crown Prince’s heart cried tears of blood ah.

Those were all houses he was fond of, that he built with utmost care and the costs were innumerable. But at this moment, they were all turned to ashes by a

huge fire.

The Empress's complexion now was also exceptionally ugly.

She completely hadn't anticipated, that this time, Nangong Liuyun would actually be this fierce, this malicious!

Originally, she had thought she had already overestimated Nangong Liuyun. She never expected that he was even fiercer than she had imagined, even more malicious, with even more determined methods of attack!

"Mother Empress, what's to be done ah? You think of a way ah!" The Crown Prince was furious and also anxious, nearly falling apart.

The Empress glanced at him harshly: "Why so worried, the heavens haven't collapsed yet!"

"The heavens may not have collapsed, but my Crown Prince mansion quickly collapsed ah....." that was a large part of his assets ah.

"Humph! Nangong Liuyun actually dares to so openly burn your residences, so condescendingly. Does he still have His Majesty the Emperor in his eyes?" The Empress raised the corner of her mouth with a hazed over expression, "Rest assured, this time, he brought about his own demise."

The Crown Prince was somewhat disbelieving, but seeing the Empress so confident, he couldn't help but to start half-believing.....Could it truly be possible?

The captain of the looting team and the rest also did not leave empty-handed. Everyone had a list in their hands, that list had noted the extent of their responsibility and target.

Chapter 612 – Lighting up fires and looting

(6)

In the wake of every shop and restaurant that was dug out, numerous talented people suddenly realized that their Crown Prince was also a hugely rich man ah.

If you were to say that the looting of the Crown Prince's auction house made him sustain an enormous loss, then burning his residencies down made the Crown Prince suffer public humiliation.

Then, following these people's actions, was to put the Crown Prince into an economic crisis.

Because after this, the looting squadrons actually stretched out their tentacles into the casinos. There were large quantities of money in the casinos and gambling halls.

Several tens of fourth ranked martial artist dropped from the sky, completely packing the entire casino.

Not led by a stranger, but actually led by Beichen Ying, who had heard the news and ran over to join in the fun.

One could only see him full of aggressiveness, with one foot stepping on the bench, raise an eyebrow and smile at the boss of the casino: "Get someone to come out, have a bet with I, your daddy."

Beichen Ying would appear in public very rarely with his identity as the President of the Mercenary Union, therefore, very few people recognized him.

The boss of this casino was one of the people that did not recognize him.

Seeing so many aggressive people arrogantly rush in, the casino boss's eyebrows wrinkled and directly flared up in anger: "Which group are you guys

from?”

“Prince Jin’s Royal Manor!” Beichen Ying said with a smile that was not quite a smile.

“Prince Jin’s Royal Manor?” The casino boss was stupefied.

Prince Jin’s Royal Manor, naturally, was like thunder that pierced the ears, who dared to offend them? But why would Prince Jin’s Royal Manor be....

“You must be the person in charge, right? Fine, hand over the crystal stones that was owed.”

“What crystal stones?” The casino boss bewilderedly asked.

Beichen Ying called out: “Brothers, they actually asked what crystal stones? What should we do?”

“Fight!” They said in one voice, full of rampant aggressiveness.

Without waiting for Beichen Ying to give the order, this group of people swarmed around using all kinds of manner, and very quickly, they smashed the entire casino into a broken mess. Also, each and every person in the casino was beaten black and blue.

As for the properties in the casino, naturally it was used to repay the debt.

After the looting, another fire was set. The fire burned this malignant tumor in the imperial capital until nothing was left.

Consequently, this group of people once again showed off their military strength and charged to the next location marked on the list.

This place was the imperial capital’s most popular and flourishing brothel.

Nobody would have thought that the behind-the-scenes boss of this Fullmoon brothel was actually their Highness the Crown Prince!

It was fine if this Fullmoon brothel was destroyed, the most important thing was that the Crown Prince operated a brothel...this matter was easy to say but didn’t sound good ah.

It was fine if it was only a joke in his own country. If it were to spread to other nations, wouldn’t he become a laughing stock?

Not long after, the originally flourishing, noisy hubbub with bright brocades in the city center, was now deadly still with flames soaring into the sky.

Even if the Crown Prince had a lot more industries, he still could not afford to feed this group of hungry wolves that encircled him, inspecting him.

Very quickly, the bolded names on the list had red circles drawn on them. All the enterprises that the Crown Prince had painstakingly built were turned into ashes in a flash.

The names of parties on the list were cataloged line by line, closely packed together. Now, they were all circled in red.

Outside, there was such a huge noise of this activity, naturally, there were countless numbers of court eunuchs making the journey back and forth to pass on the latest news.

As a result, the Crown Prince very quickly found out, what he lost were not only the residences, in addition, there was the auction house, brothel...all the industries that he secretly owned were completely wiped out!!!

“Bang—” A flower vase was heavily smashed on the ground, broken pieces of porcelain flying all over the place.

“This is too much! Simply too much!!!” The Crown Prince’s face was twisted with malevolence, as he roared loudly in fury.

Whatever stuff that he could smash with his hands were all smashed by him. Even the valuable stools made of rare wood were all heaved up and smashed into pieces by him.

Hearing the news passed on by these court eunuchs, each time more grave than before, until the end when all the enterprises that he had painstakingly built were completely destroyed.

Chapter 613 – Lighting up fires and looting

(7)

Only until this moment did the Crown Prince begin to feel fear.

There were a few industries that he had never shown his face in, yet were also revealed and cleaned out. But he didn't know how Nangong Liuyun figured it out.

Just thinking that Nangong Liuyun had this kind of ability, the Crown Prince's heart would become afraid. A kind of being terrified feeling would spring up unbidden.

The Empress stood at the doorway, her pair of unperturbed eyes watched the Crown Prince, with her forehead wrinkled slightly.

Seeing the Crown Prince's appearance reveal a terrified expression, the Empress clearly was extremely dissatisfied.

“Nangong Liujue, you are this lacking in ability?”

“You are this Empress's son, back then, your mother Empress was able to force that woman to die. Now, you actually started to fear that woman's son?”

“Nangong Liujue, you really disappointed this Empress! If you are afraid, this Empress will act as if I never had you as my son!”

The Empress's words, each sentence was more strict than the one before. It was like a sharp sword, ruthlessly thrusting towards the Crown Prince's heart.

The Crown Prince's originally chaotic brain gradually became clear-headed, he grinded his teeth and nodded.

“No, I definitely cannot let him get away with this! Nangong Liuyun, you dare to deal with me like this, I will make you die with a smooth cadence!”

The Crown Prince's face twisted into a sinister appearance, his eyes shining with brilliant rays of vicious light. It looked like a viper hidden in the underbrush.

"This now looks more like this Empress's good son. Let's go, we will go see your father the Emperor."

The Empress lifted her chin, arrogantly walking in the front with the Crown Prince following closely behind her.

Within the Imperial Study.

Emperor Jing sat upright in a circular chair, his wise and old appearance seeming somewhat exhausted.

The continent was split into four nations, there was never a tranquil moment.

Among the families that ruled the four nations, all these years, he also didn't know what's going on with Eastern Ling, that only few extremely talented people were born. Fortunately, he had Liuyun to hold the fort.

Could it be that because Liuyun, this child's, talent was too good, therefore the rest were all reincarnated in the other countries of the four nations?

Emperor Jing somewhat vexedly had his forehead down.

Now there wasn't much time left to the four nations fighting competition that was held every ten years, subjectively, these years, the talent pool in Eastern Ling empire had withered. Emperor Jing's heart was very worried.

Just at the time when he was worrying, the sound of footsteps could be heard from outside.

"Didn't I say that no matter who it is, I'm not seeing anyone now?" Emperor Jing had a displeased expression as he berated the head steward of the court eunuchs.

The head steward of the court eunuchs smiled obsequiously and said: "Your Majesty, Her Majesty the Empress and His Highness the Crown Prince, requested to see your Majesty. This time, His Highness Prince Jin made a disturbance that is quite big..."

Once Emperor Jing heard that this matter concerned Nangong Liuyun, who he had high hopes for, he changed his mind: "Fine, let them come in."

The Crown Prince, along the way, had already thought of a good stratagem, therefore, when he came in, he pretended to have been wronged and miserable.

With one look, Emperor Jing felt something was fishy.

After causing Emperor Jing's suspicions to rise, only then did the Crown Prince kneel. From beginning to end, he gave a black and white account of the entire event where he was being bullied by Nangong Liuyun.

"Father Emperor, in the Amethyst Fish Palace, he set up a trap for this subject, your son, to fall into. At that time, this subject, your son, didn't know ah. This subject, your son, regarded him as the younger brother, how could I have guarded against him? Who knew, unexpectedly, to fall like this into his trap...." The Crown Prince appeared to have been exceedingly wronged.

The more Emperor Jing heard, the tighter his brows wrinkled.

He lifted his hand, coldly instructing: "Guards, come, bring His Highness Prince Jin in."

The Empress uttered in a timely manner: "Your Majesty, there is also that fourth Miss Su, there is no harm in also bringing her in together."

Emperor Jing heard the 'fourth Miss Su', and the space between his brows that could not be seen, wrinkled slightly.

From the corner of her eyes, the Empress glanced at the flash of displeasure in his expression, and the corner of her mouth lifted into a hint of a smiling expression.

Yesterday, Li Yaoxiang from the Jade Lake's Li family entered the palace. He stayed with His Majesty alone for a long time. After Li Yaoxiang left, his Majesty's expression didn't look good.

The Jade Lake's Li family had always had a close relationship with the royal family. This time, it looked like the relationship was at odds, very clearly, it was because of something related to Nangong Liuyun.

Chapter 614 – Lighting up fires and looting

(8)

Getting to the heart of the matter, wasn't it also because of that loathsome girl?

A cold, stern smile appeared in the Empress's eyes, this expression flashed by quickly and vanished without a trace. Once again glancing at the Empress, the Empress was as dignified and prudent as before.

After about an hour later, Nangong Liuyun arrived, with Su Luo following at his side.

Emperor Jing directly ignored Su Luo, scowling at Nangong Liuyun and angrily saying: "What are you doing? Rebellious ah?!"

Emperor Jing heavily slapped down the evidence sheets of impeachment and the legal seal on the table.

Such a small effort in a short time, and the impeachment papers for His Highness Prince Jin were like snowflakes falling in the imperial study. Stacked together, it was actually one third of a meter high.

At this moment, Emperor Jing's heart was very displeased.

Both because of the Crown Prince's stupidity was beyond belief, and also because of Nangong Liuyun's fierce ruthlessness and heartlessness.

Nangong Liuyun gave a slight greeting, standing expressionlessly beneath the emperor.

"You tell me! What are you doing? Ordering a group of people to fight, set fires, and loot! A nice proper Imperial Capital is in turmoil because of your doings, there are cries of complaints from the people that filled the roads. You

say something, you tell me, in the end, what you are doing!”

Confronted with Emperor Jing’s sudden rage, Nangong Liuyun was still unperturbed as the wind. The corner of his mouth actually even hooked into a ghost of a smile.

“Father Emperor, so many impeachment papers and you still can’t understand them?”

“We, the empire, is in the middle of asking you!!” Emperor Jing heavily slapped the table with the palm of his hand.

In front of this son, he really needed to find the dignity as the father and ruler.

It was always him spitting anger and flying into a rage, whereas the one being scolded was unperturbed without a ripple, calm and collected.

This made Emperor Jing feel like an idiot performing a one-man comedy show.

“Oh.” Nangong Liuyun nodded, acting as if he was taking things very seriously. He asked, deadly seriously: “Father Emperor, everywhere under heaven, isn’t returning a debt right and proper?”

Emperor Jing was immediately stumped by the question, he found the time to glance at the Crown Prince, seeing his evasive expression, Emperor Jing couldn’t help but sigh in his heart.

The Crown Prince had now changed into this appearance, he couldn’t avoid saying this was to the second child’s credit.

Second child was truly too outstanding and dazzling. Over these years, the Crown Prince had always lived in his shadow, it was also no wonder that he would take the wrong path.

Emperor Jing gave a dry cough: “How could he, with no cause or reason, owe you so many crystal stones? Perhaps you had planned it?”

With regards to schemes, if second child wanted to trap the eldest, the eldest child would never be able to escape.

The Crown Prince raised his eyes in a flash and said in a stern voice: “Father Emperor is wise, this is precisely a scheme Nangong Liuyun set up against this son, your official!”

The corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth suggested a mocking expression. He indifferently cast a glance at the Crown Prince, a sidelong glance that was cast disdainfully from high above at him: "Oh? So easily trapped by other people, isn't this Crown Prince too stupid?"

Su Luo, who was standing beside Nangong Liuyun, drew in a cold breath of air.

In front of the emperor and empress, Nangong Liuyun actually dared speak such a thing, ah. His poisonous tongue danced, nothing was taboo, didn't he see the emperor and empress's complexion were already rigid.

"You— —" The Crown Prince's rage in his heart soared to the heavens, but unfortunately, he didn't have the kind of poisonous tongue that Nangong Liuyun had. So, a retort wouldn't come out.

Emperor Jing helplessly heaved a sigh.

"Enough, you shut up." Emperor Jing berated the Crown Prince and turned to Nangong Liuyun to say: "Second child, give Father Emperor some face, let this matter end here, how about it?"

Even an honest and upright official would have difficulty resolving a family dispute, Emperor Jing had an extreme headache.

Emperor Jing's words were clearly partial to the Crown Prince.

Because of the noisy activity that Nangong Liuyun had created, taking all of the Crown Prince's loss into account, it was no more than several hundred green-colored crystal stones.

But now, this old emperor wanted to settle the debt just like this with a stroke of a brush.

The Crown Prince was secretly delighted, if it was indeed so, he figured he could still accept it.

However, Nangong Liuyun was never a person who would let himself suffer a loss.....

Chapter 615 – Lighting up fires and looting

(9)

Not to mention, the woman he loved was standing beside him right now. Such a great opportunity to show off his brilliance and military might, how could he let it go.

Nangong Liuyun cast a faint glance at Emperor Jing, his eyes turning cold: “Father Emperor, face and respect is not for people to give, it is something you must strive to acquire. At this moment, do you insist on being partial to him?”

Looking at Nangong Liuyun’s pair of profoundly deep eyes, Emperor Jing’s heart had some restrained fear, and he coldly said: “Then what do you want to do?”

Nangong Liuyun: “Still those same words, it is heaven’s law and only proper to pay back a debt.”

“How many properties and industry of his did you destroy? Can’t even count it” Emperor Jing complained.

Suddenly, a list written in black and white, was placed in front of Emperor Jing’s face, that list was clearly classified with the addresses arranged neatly.

He was investigating the Crown Prince? What did he want to do with such a thorough investigation of the Crown Prince? Could it be that he wanted to replace the Crown Prince?

Emperor Jing raised his eyes, stunned, and met Nangong Liuyun’s pair of dark, cold and cynical eyes. That enigmatic expression in those eyes would frighten a person’s heart.

Now, Emperor Jing suddenly recalled a saying: the golden scales of a person with no particular talent, after encountering challenges, would turn into a

dragon.

Such a brilliant and splendid Nangong Liuyun, now, he was already a giant among men. How could this tiny Eastern Ling country hold him? How could the position of the Crown Prince even enter his eyes as worthy?

Emperor Jing immediately swallowed his original words of criticism that was in his throat.

Nangong Liuyun raised his eyebrows with a ghost of smile said: "How much the damaged properties were worth, is all clearly listed here, does Father Emperor have an objection?"

Emperor Jing felt very helpless.

He was obviously the ruler, why did he feel like he was being led by the nose by this second child?

He snorted twice: "Yes, can be considered clear and understandable."

Nangong Liuyun unflinchingly said: "If it was not for the Crown Prince escaping, today's affair also would not have occurred, Father Emperor, you tell me, am I right?"

The more the Crown Prince listened to this conversation, the more he felt something was fishy.....

Emperor Jing, nevertheless, helplessly nodded: "What do you want?"

"This son, your official, only wants fairness." Nangong Liuyun's eyes became slightly cold, "Now, even though the Crown Prince was the main culprit, but this son is still willing to assume half of the Crown Prince's losses, does Father Emperor have any objections?"

Before Emperor Jing could reply, the Crown Prince jumped up: "Who are you calling the main culprit? I can only see that the real main culprit is her!"

The Crown Prince's finger pointed directly to Su Luo.

Su Luo frowned slightly.

She was just curious about how the emperor of ancient times looked in the flesh, therefore, when Nangong Liuyun consulted for her wishes, she just

followed him without saying a word.

She was merely here to watch the play and didn't want to participate in this performance. But the Crown Prince, being this flustered and exasperated, could offend Nangong Liuyun ah.

Su Luo crossed her arms over her chest, casting a sidelong glance at the utterly discomfited Crown Prince. The corner of her mouth lifted into a careless smile.

Because of being pointed out by the Crown Prince, everyone's line of sight was concentrated on Su Luo.

Needless to say, the Empress' expression was not good.

Emperor Jing was now looking at Su Luo, with a dark look, his eyes narrowed dangerously.

Emperor Jing frowned with displeasure: "When did this emperor's imperial study become a place that anyone could just wantonly enter?"

Su Luo indifferently glanced at Emperor Jing, coldly smiled and said: "The Emperor reminded this subject, this subject will now leave."

When Su Luo turned to leave, her slim white wrist was pulled to a stop by Nangong Liuyun. They only saw Nangong Liuyun smiling towards Su Luo and whispering something in her ear. When his eyes lifted up again, they were already hazed over.

Those jet-black as ink eyes, were oozing with horrifying light, sinister and bloody, truly would terrify people.

Even Emperor Jing couldn't help but retreat a step back.

The corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth held a sneer, and his sinister words sounded: "Father Emperor, by becoming the emperor, this king's Luo girl can enter and exit this imperial study at will?"

Chapter 616 – Lighting up fires and looting

(10)

“Bang——” Emperor Jing felt as if his own head was struck by lightning.

Momentarily, all the blood in his body rushed to his forehead, buzzing sounds resounded in both ears, and his complexion stiffened in an instant.

He unwaveringly stared at Nangong Liuyun. In a trembling voice, he asked: “What did you just say?”

However, that sinister smirk plastered at the corner of Nangong Liuyun’s mouth became even more obvious. He justly and honorably repeated it again : “If I become the emperor, this king’s Luo girl can enter and exit this imperial study at will?”

He hadn’t heard it wrong, second child really did speak those grave words out loud!

Emperor Jing’s complexion became increasingly ugly, and he angrily burst forth : “Nangong Liuyun, such huge guts, do not think that we, the emperor, dare not punish you!”

Just because he wanted to let that girl enter and exit the imperial library at will, this brat would think of seizing the throne? Emperor Jing felt that his brain was in such extreme pain that he almost passed out.

Seeing Emperor Jing and Nangong Liuyun, this father and son fighting, the happiest were the Empress and the Crown Prince.

Now, both of them looked at each other and smiled, but neither of them let out a sound to disturb this scene.

Naturally, in their opinion, the fiercer these two fought, the better.

Nangong Liuyun indifferently smiled: “Nangong Jing, can you even punish me?”

Nangong Jing..... He actually directly said the Emperor’s given name! In his eyes, was there even his own father, the monarch?

At this moment, Emperor Jing was so furious that he nearly vomited blood.

Su Luo somewhat worriedly pulled at Nangong Liuyun’s hand.

The two of them stood very close, through the warmth of his hand, she could feel the restrained emotions from the bottom of his heart.

There was wrath and indignation in his emotions, there was unwillingness, and also, there was hatred.

Su Luo didn’t know exactly what happened in the past that made Nangong Liuyun view Emperor Jing as an enemy. However, she knew that Nangong Liuyun’s rage now would only let the Crown Prince get off cheaply.

“Don’t be angry.” Su Luo’s gentle voice echoed in Nangong Liuyun’s ear.

Nangong Liuyun lowered his eyes, in his eyes were intoxicating, tender feelings: “Be at ease, with this king here, nobody dares to bully you, not even the Emperor.”

“You——” Emperor Jing’s face flushed red when his name was mentioned.

Did this brat even have a little bit of filial piety? Unexpectedly, not even giving his Father the Emperor a little bit of face.

Emperor Jing angrily glared at Su Luo.

“You are Su Luo? Su Zian’s daughter?” Emperor Jing looked at Su Luo and immediately frowned.

With such skinny-and-thin-as-a-bamboo, small physique, a complexion that could barely be called delicate and pretty No matter how much he looked, he was dissatisfied.

Su Luo generously looked straight at Emperor Jing: “Responding to Your Majesty, this woman is indeed Su Luo.”

Su Luo’s neither servile nor obsequious manner, in Emperor Jing’s eyes, made

him increasingly displeased with her.

Being neither servile nor obsequious towards the Emperor, then that was being disrespectful, extremely disrespectful! This loathsome girl could learn anything from his second child, but only learned his entire body full of stubbornness and rudeness.

The wrinkles of Emperor Jing's brows became deeper, disdainfully curling his lips said: "If we, this Emperor, did not remember wrongly, before, you were engaged to my first child."

Su Luo's secretly cursed and disagreed in her heart: "Yes."

Emperor Jing angrily said: "Since you were engaged to my first son, why are you now entangled together with my second son? When all is said and done, you are still a well-bred, young lady of a prestigious family. How could you not know about honor and shame!"

Emperor Jing did not even give Su Luo a little bit of face, showering down his stern criticism.

Su Luo already knew that Emperor Jing did not like her, with regards to his scolding, she did not even put a little bit of it to heart. Her face retained the calm and unperturbed appearance.

These kind of words, Su Luo didn't even put it into her heart, but it could not withstand Nangong Liuyun's fury since he wouldn't ignore it.

He didn't even have enough time to pamper and indulge this girl, holding her in his hands and was afraid of her flying away. Like candy, keeping her in his mouth but afraid of her melting. Now this, other people actually dared to curse at her in front of him, how could he let this be?

Chapter 617 – Lighting up fires and looting

(11)

A sharp light flashed through Nangong Liuyun's eyes, ruthlessly thrusting towards the main point: "Humph, who was the one that bestowed the engagement at that time, then afterwards, who was the one that unfathomably cancelled the engagement again. Using the imperial edict as if it was a child's toy, doing the job of the emperor until it ended up like this and still feels no shame."

"SsssSss—" everyone present all sucked in a breaths of cold air.

Su Luo could not help but clap for Nangong Liuyun secretly in her heart.

Nangong Liuyun was very cool, just too awesome!

If she was not under everyone's gazes, Su Luo wished she could rush up and deliver a kiss to him.

As opposed to Su Luo who was rejoicing in other people's misfortunes, opposite of her, Emperor Jing's blood pressure was now rushing forth and soaring rapidly.

"You—You—" Emperor Jing pointed at Nangong Liuyun with one hand, while the other covered his forehead. Clearly, he had received excess provocation, so much so that he could not even speak.

This unfilial son, actually dared to speak like this to him!

"Nangong Liuyun, you look at yourself, you have already angered Father Emperor to this degree, what else do you want!" The Crown Prince jumped out with only indiscriminating criticism.

The Empress also, in a very displeased manner, glared at Su Luo, and she

turned around to embrace Emperor Jing: “Your Majesty, Your Majesty, do not be angry, Prince Jin has also been angered until he is confused. These are not his heartfelt words.”

Saying this, the Empress did not forget to call out to Nangong Liuyun: “Prince Jin, quickly come over and apologize to your father, quickly!”

This time, Nangong Liuyun’s performance also increased the Empress’s knowledge and experience..... As it turned out, not even Emperor Jing could pressure Nangong Liuyun. However, this was also good, just like this, then Emperor Jing would shun Nangong Liuyun. The Empress secretly rejoiced in her heart.

The hand covering Emperor Jing’s forehead secretly opened a small crack, as he furtively glanced at Nangong Liuyun.

Who would have thought, his gaze unexpectedly met with Nangong Liuyun’s taunting and cynical eyes.

Emperor Jing’s figure stiffened, feeling increasingly that he was in a difficult situation.....

Nangong Liuyun did not feel like bothering with him, he shook the loan receipt in his hand, and coldly smiled: “Nangong Liujue, the damage created today amounts to five hundred pieces of green crystal stones that I already shouldered for you.”

“This.....” the Crown Prince hesitated somewhat.

In fact, if those properties were calculated at half the price, they were not even worth five hundred pieces of green-colored crystal stones.

That’s why, with Nangong Liuyun calculating this way, it was already in his favor.

“You have some complaints?” Nangong Liuyun cast him a cold glance.

The Crown Prince furtively looked at Emperor Jing, however currently, Emperor Jing had his forehead covered and was crouching on the side. Nangong Liuyun simply refused to acknowledge him.

However, looking at his current influence, now, it could already be ignored and

disregarded.

The Crown Prince's heart became extremely depressed. Even though from the start, he felt that when Father Emperor confronted second brother, he would most likely lose. However, he had not foreseen that before everything even started, the Emperor would already be extinguished by second brother's poisonous tongue.

The Crown Prince really wanted to renege on the debt and not return it. But, because the debt was owed to Nangong Liuyun, as a result, his plan of renegeing could never come to fruition in this lifetime.

Hesitating to speak for a while, the Crown Prince finally, still silently nodded.

"Then, the remaining two thousand and five hundred pieces of crystal stones will be taken from your treasure storage pavilion." Nangong Liuyun coldly snorted.

Two thousand five hundred pieces.....wouldn't that be clearing out his treasure storage pavilion until it was empty, and there would still be a deficit?

The Crown Prince used his eyes to stare at the empress.

The Empress gave a displeased complexion, she swept Su Luo a glance and coldly said: "Come, follow this Empress, this Empress has some words to say to you concerning your future."

After the Empress finished speaking, she directly walked towards the side chamber.

Nangong Liuyun pulled at Su Luo's hand, stopping her.

"You should be at ease, in such a public place with so many people, what could possibly happen to me? You have just this little faith in me?"

Su Luo originally did not want to go, however, with the Empress like this and everybody watching, if she did not go, it would be a bit hard to explain.

Su Luo, however, was actually a little bit curious.

This matter that concerned her future? In the end, what did the Empress want to talk about?

Chapter 618 – Nangong flipped out (1)

Side palace hall.

When Su Luo entered, the Empress had just sat upright in the seat of honor, watching her with a tranquil gaze.

Su Luo did not pay her respects, the corner of her mouth merely rose slightly, not showing any weakness as she welcomed the Empress's gaze.

The Empress held the fragrant tea, carelessly tasting it and giving Su Luo the cold shoulder.

But unlike her appearance, in her mind, she was not this inattentive. On the contrary, with regards to this Su Luo, she was somewhat suspicious.

The Empress couldn't remember the last time she had seen Su Luo, but in her impression, the previously Su Luo was stupid, timid, and couldn't be brought out in public.

However, the Su Luo right now calmly stood there, because of the backlighting, her entire figure seemed blurred and hazy.

So unperturbed, unhurried and calm, that temperament and atmosphere, was more noble and steady than a princess raised by the Royal Family.

When the Empress was sizing up Su Luo, Su Luo was also inwardly pondering.

This Empress appeared gentle and harmless on the surface, but that pair of eyes flashed with a sharp coldness from time to time, was seen through by Su Luo.

Su Luo understood very clearly that the Empress did not like her. The Empress calling her out alone was definitely to deliberately make things difficult for her. But, why would she be worried? In any case, she also didn't like the Empress.

If she was to be polite, then fine, but if she deliberately made it difficult for her, then Su Luo was not a pushover that could easily be pinched as the hostess wished.

The Empress saw Su Luo staying calm, and she couldn't help but feel somewhat smothered in her heart, becoming increasingly unhappy with Su Luo.

"Sit." Under the gazing eyes that were opened wide to stare narrowly at her, in the end, it was still the Empress who spoke first to break the silence.

"Thank the Empress for granting a seat." Su Luo, neither servile nor obsequious, made her salutations, and then she sat down as if it was her right.

Afterwards, naturally, it was a face-to-face with the Empress, silent staring contest.

The Empress's long, shapely eyebrows wrinkled slightly.

This loathsome girl that didn't know what was good for her, actually thought she was someone of importance. She actually went so far as to learn Nangong Liuyun's mannerism.

Although the Empress was annoyed in her heart, but she had to request something from her, so she couldn't embarrass the person too much. One could only see her lightly glance at Su Luo: "I heard that the Crown Prince owes you a lot of green-colored crystal stones?"

"Yes." Su Luo replied concisely.

"You have a lot of guts ah, daring to challenge the Crown Prince. Even if your father came, he also doesn't have this much guts." The corner of the Empress's mouth held onto a faint sneer.

"It's heaven's law and only proper to pay back a debt." Su Luo lazily and directly repeated the words Nangong Liuyun said before.

The Empress's hand that was concealed by the phoenix robes clenched tightly, a displeased expression passing by her face.

She had already hinted so clearly, was this loathsome girl truly so foolish or just acting stupid? Could it be that in her mind, she didn't know even the basic difference between a ruler and his ministers!

The Empress took a deep breath, and then slowly spoke a sentence: “If this Empress was to ask you to forgive this debt, what do you think?”

A sneer flashed through Su Luo’s heart.

The Empress was also really interesting, she could not deal with Nangong Liuyun, but chose to attack her, instead. Could it be that she, Su Luo, seemed like such a pushover?

Acting like a pushover, Su Luo raised her eyes. Staring at the Empress in an astonished manner, because she was too surprised, so her voice was quite loud: “Empress Mother-in-law, you want me to renounce these one thousand five hundred green-colored crystal stones for nothing?”

Such a loud tone that also contained Su Luo’s strong spirit force, therefore, her voice was sent out especially far.

The few males in the Imperial Study could hear it very clearly.

Su Luo absolutely did this on purpose.

Nangong Liuyun very satisfiedly sat on the round, yellow rosewood chair, the corner of his mouth rising unrestrainedly into a cynical smile. His dark eyes were pitch-black as the night as they gazed at the Crown Prince with a ghost of a smile, while lifting a sharp swordlike eyebrow.

The Crown Prince’s face flashed with a blush of shame, awkwardly, he directly turned his face away.

Chapter 619 – Nangong flipped out (2)

Emperor Jing looked at these two siblings, helplessly sighed, then fell back into his seat.

Momentarily, the inside of the imperial study became quiet.

Right now, inside the side chamber, the Empress was glaring rigidly at Su Luo, wishing she could bore a hole through her face by glaring.

She never expected that this loathsome girl would actually shout it out loud, wasn't this the same as letting everybody know that she, as the righteous and grand Empress, was relying on force to bully others?

The Empress inhaled deeply and glared coldly at Su Luo: "Su Luo! You have a lot of guts!"

Su Luo opened wide her pair of perplexed and innocent eyes: "What did I do wrong?"

The Empress was already angry, after seeing Su Luo's pretend innocent expression, she became even more furious.

"I order you to shut up!" the Empress angrily said in a low voice!

"Oh." Su Luo very cleverly and seemingly obediently shut up, and once more, her eyes lowered.

"It seems that you are unwilling?" the Empress calmed down. She was also not a fool, and immediately understood after a little thought.

"This official's daughter does not understand the Empress's meaning." Su Luo responded ambiguously.

The Empress suddenly smiled coldly as she stared at Su Luo strangely.

However, Su Luo remained calm and composed, serenely, she let the empress

look. In the end, she even grinned at the empress.

The Empress felt her chest become stifled.

These kinds of psychological tactics, she, who always had the upper hand due to her high position, was ever-victorious. However, in front of this loathsome girl, it had lost its effectiveness.

The Empress coldly laughed: “Su Luo, you are very self-confident. Let this Empress guess where your self-confidence truly came from.”

“I’d like to hear the details.” Su Luo was using words to lure the Empress who kept evading the main point, Su Luo’s heart was rather dissatisfied.

Before seeing the Empress’s performance, Su Luo had thought that her life experiences made her really good.

“It must be Nangong Liuyun, then? You thought that if you curry favor with him, then everything would be unhindered, right?” The Empress leisurely and comfortably played around with the white jade ring on her thumb, the corner of her mouth curving up into a smirk.

Su Luo remained silent, unspeaking. She had always known that relying on a mountain, it would collapse, relying on people, they would run away, the most reliable thing was still herself. Therefore, no matter how good Nangong Liuyun treated her, she would never let go of pursuing to the pinnacle of martial arts.

The Empress saw her remaining silent and believed that she had tacitly agreed. Immediately, her heart was somewhat excited, but her face remained cold as she snorted: “No matter how good Nangong Liuyun treats you, in the end, you will be no more than a concubine who could not be brought out!”

Was the Empress trying to drive a wedge between them? Su Luo thought this was very funny, however, her expression cooperated with what the Empress said, looking bewildered.

The Empress was very satisfied with Su Luo’s response and cast an enigmatic glance at her: “Have you ever heard of Jade Lake’s Li family?”

The Jade Lake’s fairy? This name was on the verge of popping out. Su Luo slightly frowned, looking at the Empress.

As expected, the Empress coldly laughed: “Li Yaoyao, this name you may not know, but you should already know about the Jade Lake’s fairy, right?”

“Yes, I know.” Su Luo nodded.

Not only did she know, but they had also secretly exchanged blows a few times.

The Empress carelessly watched her and coldly smiled: “Then, this matter of Li Yaoyao and Nangong Liuyun’s having an engagement agreement, are you aware of this?”

Engagement agreement? Su Luo’s eyes squinted, her heart becoming sour.

Su Luo’s beautiful eyes stared at the Empress, her voice smooth and unperturbed: “Empress, why are you trying to sow dissension? Whether Nangong Liuyun is engaged or not, how could he not know himself?”

Unexpectedly, the Empress started to coldly laugh: “A major event such as a marriage is always decided by the parents, why would he need to know? Even if he knew, you think that he would have told you?”

Just when Su Luo frowned, the Empress continued: “Of course, this matter has not yet been publicized, there is still time to prevent it.”

Su Luo looked at the Empress.

Chapter 620 – Nangong flipped out (3)

The Empress's mouth hooked into a having-prevailed smile: "If you can tear up that loan receipt, then this Empress promises to use all her strength to help you destroy that engagement."

"You don't believe me?" The Empress saw Su Luo did not speak and she gave a cold humph.

"I believe you." Su Luo said faintly.

The Empress naturally did not want Nangong Liuyun to marry someone from the Jade Lake's Li family. Because, if that were to happen, with the support of the Jade Lake's Li family, then what could the Crown Prince bring to the fight when he was already at a disadvantage from before?

Therefore, even if Su Luo didn't make the promise, the Empress would use every means to destroy this marriage. Now, the Empress saying this to her was merely to bully her. figuring she didn't know the critical point within.

Su Luo was silent.

She was silent not because of the Empress's words, rather, she was observing a moment of silence for Emperor Jing.

If he really dared to draw up the engagement contract with the Jade Lake's fairy on Nangong Liuyun's behalf without asking him, what kind of stuff would Nangong Liuyun do? She was convinced that when the time came, the pressure on Emperor Jing would be huge.

The Empress saw that Su Luo was silent, and believed this matter was in the bag. The smiling expression at the corner of her mouth became increasingly more self-satisfied.

"Bring it over." The Empress extended a white, jade-like hand towards Su Luo.

“Bring what?” Su Luo pretended, with her entire face looking confused.

“Su Luo, don’t pretend to be naive, you need this Empress’s assistance, otherwise, His Highness Prince Jin will definitely marry Li Yaoyao.” The Empress bluntly said everything, leaving it out in the open, “Therefore, bring me that loan receipt.”

All of a sudden, Su Luo smiled, her smile was splendid like a blooming flower: “Empress, Our Mother, in your eyes, am I just that stupid?”

“You...what did you say?” The Empress stared at that splendid smile on Su Luo’s face in astonishment. These words spoken by Su Luo made the Empress’s eyes momentarily contract.

“Empress, Our Mother, if the Jade Lake’s fairy were to marry Nangong Liuyun, the Jade Lake palace would use their full strength to support Nangong Liuyun. When that time comes, then the Crown Prince wouldn’t have a thread of opportunity. Once the Crown Prince loses all his influences and power, then presumably, Empress, Our Mother’s, days, would also not be so good.”

Su Luo smilingly looked at the Empress, with every word she spoke, the Empress’s complexion would become paler.

“Therefore, the person that wants the most to block Nangong Liuyun’s marriage to the Jade Lake’s fairy is you, the Empress. Why should I be worried?” Su Luo spread out her hands, smiling innocently.

The fury on the Empress’s face grew without restraint.

She never expected that this loathsome girl was not incited by her into disharmony, and also wasn’t poisoned by her words. In the end, she actually reversed the words and checkmated her!

The Empress’s chest moved up and down violently, “You are a loathsome girl that doesn’t know what is good for you! Nangong Liuyun is willing to protect you, but can he protect Su Manor? You are forcing the entire Su Manor into hell!”

Su Luo again shouted out loud in astonishment. “Empress, Our Mother, even if you loathe me, you also shouldn’t move against Su Manor ah!”

This voice was simply earth-shattering, resonating to the skies.

Not only the people nearby in the Imperial Study could hear it clearly, even those maids and court eunuchs in the far distance could hear every word.

The Empress was so infuriated that her face flushed red!

When she was married, she was already high above as the first wife. After becoming the Empress, she again was one person above everyone. Never had there been anyone who dared to contradict her like this.

The Empress, utterly discomfited, grabbed the official blue and white porcelain teacup by her hand, swung her arms and directly tossed it at Su Luo——

When that teacup was a hand's width away from Su Luo, Su Luo very rudely sat her butt on the ground, evading the attack of the teacup.

Su Luo had already made preparation for when the Empress would act out violently, therefore, her reaction was very fast.

At the same time, Nangong Liuyun's figure had already appeared.

One could only see his sleeves raise slightly, a burst of wind unfurling.

“Bang——” that teacup did not end up on the ground, rather, it was spun around by Nangong Liuyun's wide and long sleeves. It directly shot towards the Empress's forehead!

Chapter 621 – Nangong flipped out (4)

“Nangong Liuyun, you dare!!!” The Crown Prince angrily shouted, but it was already too late to block the teacup’s path.

Following right behind Nangong Liuyun was Emperor Jing and the Crown Prince.

Emperor Jing’s expression right now was very complicated.

He never expected that this unfilial son had become so daring to this degree!

That was the Empress ah, this nation’s mother, the ceremonial mother of all under the heavens, the Empress ah!

In a public place with numerous people and under their gazes, he would actually directly...this was the great crime of matricide!

Not to mention Emperor Jing’s incomparable shock, just speaking of that teacup alone, that was being treated like a ball, slapped back and forth.

One could only see the teacup on a straight line path, shooting towards the Empress with a speed that was too fast to block or dodge.

The Empress’s heart was greatly alarmed!

She glanced towards Su Luo, immediately, a bright idea flashed by. With a ‘bang’ sound, she sat heavily on the ground.

Even though the two people made the exact same move, but the difference with the inside trick was still too great.

Su Luo was already a martial artist at the peak of the fourth rank, her body had reached an astonishing degree of toughness and flexibility. How could an insignificant fake fall be a problem?

But it was not the same for the Empress!

Even though the Empress's talent before was pretty good, but these years, she was busy with the inner fights in the Imperial palace and living like a princess. Where would she find the time to cultivate?

In addition, the teacup smashing towards her had come from the hand of an infuriated Prince Jin!

One could only hear the Empress, with a difficult movement, falling from a high position to the ground, barely avoiding that approaching teacup with a murderous aura.

But the strong wind of the teacup swept past her head.

"Ouch——" The Empress, who sat heavily down on the ground, gave a loud cry of pain.

The teacup swept by the Empress's coiled hair, and immediately, the Empress's beautifully coiffured hair was messed up. The phoenix and gold hairpins made crashing sounds as they fell. The Empress with disheveled hair cut a very sorry figure.

The Crown Prince hurriedly rushed over and sank to his knees to help the Empress, anxiously saying: "Mother Empress, are you okay? Is anything wrong?"

The Empress, in a panicked state, had her eyes opened bewilderedly and indetermindly. She held her chest with lingering fear...too frightening, simply too scary....

The Crown Prince, seeing that the Empress was unscathed, only then did he turn around. He pointed at Nangong Liuyun with a malevolent expression and angrily roared. " You dare to murder Mother Empress! Nangong Liuyun, don't think that because your martial arts are so strong you are extraordinary! If you murdered Mother Empress, you would meet the wrath of the heavens!"

"Father Emperor, Nangong Liuyun intended to kill Mother Empress, I hope Father Emperor will give her justice!"

The Crown Prince's angry outburst aroused Emperor Jing from his shock.

Now the expression Emperor Jing looked at Nangong Liuyun with was very complicated.

Only until just a moment ago, when he moved against the Empress without the slightest hesitation, had he suddenly come to realize that this second child was no longer that child who back then, had sought his protection. The Nangong Liuyun right now was not someone he could control.

“Father Emperor! Father Emperor!” The Crown Prince cried out loudly towards Emperor Jing.

Emperor Jing waved his hands toward him, but his gaze unblinkingly stared at Nangong Liuyun: “We, the Emperor, will give you a chance to explain.”

“Explain?” Nangong Liuyun smiled, his smile was cruel, noble and untamed, carrying a touch of disdain, “What does Father Emperor want this official to explain?”

“Just now, you tried to kill the Empress, still dare to deny it?” The Emperor, panting with rage, bellowed at him.

This was him, the Emperor, protecting him, giving him a chance to explain. He actually returned it to question him?

Nangong Liuyun was really too brazen, too used to doing whatever he pleased! That was the Empress! Could it be that he didn't even know the basic filial obedience? The more Emperor Jing thought, the more furious he became.

“That Empress wants to murder this king's little princess as she wishes, what kind of crime should that be?” The corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth lifted into a smiling expression, but his eyes were ice-cold, lacking any temperature.

Deep and eerie, strange and extremely cold, no one dared to look straight at that gaze.

Chapter 622 – Nangong flipped out (5)

Other things, Emperor Jing did not pay attention to, he only paid attention to Nangong Liuyun's way of addressing her.

"Little princess?" His eyes opened wide in shock. When did Nangong Liuyun have an extra little princess, and him, as the Emperor, actually didn't know?

"Yes." Nangong Liuyun said deadly earnestly.

One could only see him pull on Su Luo, both hands were like iron cuffs, imprisoning her, not giving her any opportunity to struggle free.

At this moment, with daggers drawn, Su Luo felt that it was better that she didn't say anything at all.

In fact, in her heart, she had already tacitly agreed on the reality that Nangong Liuyun would be her future mate. It was only...that she wouldn't tell him this.

As for Emperor Jing, his finger was shaking as he pointed at Su Luo, glaring at Nangong Liuyun in complete disbelief, raising his voice to say: "You want to marry her and make her your Princess Jin?"

"You have an objection?" Nangong Liuyun lifted up an eyebrow and carelessly asked.

Have an objection? Certainly he objected, he had a huge complaint!

Emperor Jing's heart was not satisfied, pointing at Su Luo as he angrily said to Nangong Liuyun: "What kind of vision do you have? How could this girl be worthy of you? This is simply a lapse of judgement on your part, even though you are wise! We, the Emperor, will never agree to this!"

Su Luo, who was being looked down upon by Emperor Jing, watched Emperor Jing, unperturbed.

Nangong Liuyun tightly held onto Su Luo's hand, and pointed at the Empress, his eyes like sharp swords shooting towards Emperor Jing: "What kind of vision do you yourself have?"

"You——" Emperor Jing finally was angered to the degree where his complexion was ashen, both eyes wide open and staring fixedly at Nangong Liuyun. He was so infuriated that he simply could not say a word.

Nangong Liuyun's expression was as impassive as before, with one hand on Su Luo's shoulder: "I see Luo Luo as very good, in my opinion, it is still uncertain as to who really is not worthy of whom."

His Luo girl, naturally was unique and unrivaled in the world. He had searched the entire world before finding her, yet others actually dared to criticize her as not worthy? Wasn't this courting death?

Emperor Jing was infuriated until he was gasping for breath, gulping deep breaths of air.

"We, the Emperor, do not agree!!!" Emperor Jing loudly yelled! And he even coordinated with stamping his feet!

"I did not ask for your opinion." Nangong Liuyun didn't even bother to toss this his way. In other words, whether Emperor Jing agreed or not, as far as Nangong Liuyun was concerned, it was not at all important.

Emperor Jing was used to being the Emperor and was always waited upon and flattered by others. When had he been so scorned by anyone?

"You, you this unfilial son! See if we, the Emperor, won't beat you to death!" Emperor Jing was infuriated to the point of waving his hand to directly slap towards Nangong Liuyun's face.

However, Emperor Jing's hand was fixed in mid-air.

Because his hand was effortless gripped to a stop by Su Luo.

A trace of a cold smile flashed through Su Luo's eyes, in passing, she threw his hands off. Unexpectedly, Emperor Jing retreated a step from being thrown off.

"You——" Emperor Jing was infuriated until he nearly went insane.

He, as the majestic and grand Emperor of Eastern Ling empire, his existence

should be the most respected. Being bullied by second child could be forgiven, but now, an insignificant, young loathsome girl would also treat him like this?

Emperor Jing was practically in disbelief...because in his mind and from his knowledge, this simply could not happen.

Why did these two people not see and treat him as the emperor!!!

Su Luo clapped her hands, her complexion was restrained as she seriously watched Emperor Jing: "Nangong Liuyun is mine. I absolutely will not allow anyone to hurt him."

"Luo Luo..." Nangong Liuyun lowered his eyes with a complex expression as he watched Su Luo.

Just a moment ago, in the split second when she blocked Father Emperor, Nangong Liuyun's heart warmed without a reason. That kind of warmth, which he hadn't felt for a long time, was somewhat unfamiliar, and made him somewhat at a loss. But, that feeling felt unprecedentedly good.

Su Luo held his hand tightly with a serious expression, looking at him: "Before, it was always you protecting me, in fact, I also want to protect you."

Chapter 623 – Nangong flipped out (6)

Nangong Liuyun's figure jolted slightly to a stop. Lowering his eyes, gently and cautiously, he gazed at Su Luo with a nervous expression..... his eyes held disbelieving rays of light.

For a long time, he had cast aside his arrogance to foolishly wrap himself around her in order to thoroughly tie her up. He even lowered himself to act as her servant, repeatedly investing in their relationship. Now finally, had he obtained a response?

Faced with Nangong Liuyun's unbelieving gaze, Su Luo gave a smile, a smile that was as beautiful as blooming flowers in the summer.

She pushed his arm, as if to shake him awake from a dream: "I am yours, you are naturally mine ah, could it be that you don't agree?"

Nangong Liuyun, as if beginning to wake up from a dream, was extremely happily surprised, and embraced Su Luo. He was so excited that he nodded wildly: "Agree, couldn't agree with you more!"

The Nangong Liuyun right now, where was the insufferably arrogant His Highness Prince Jin that dared to challenge the powerful emperor?

The him now was like young child who hasn't grown any hair with excitement that was almost impossible to restrain.

Emperor Jing saw this young pair of lovebirds flirting in front of his eyes, and a raging inferno ignited in his eyes: "In such a public place with lots of people, in front of we, the Emperor, you guys are still hugging and embracing, how scandalous!"

After that, he directly aimed his criticism at Su Luo: "Su Zian seems okay, how could he have raised this kind of loathsome girl like you who doesn't know any

shame! You are a girl, be aware and have some sense of honor okay?"

Su Luo happily and contentedly stayed in Nangong Liuyun's embrace, she poked her head out and coldly smiled towards Emperor Jing: "Who did you say was shameless?"

Nangong Liuyun held onto Su Luo, coldly smiling at Emperor Jing who was nearly angered to death: "Whatever Luo girl says, is what I say."

"Your Father the Emperor says I am shameless oh." Su Luo rubbed against Nangong Liuyun's chest.

Nangong liuyun dropped a tender kiss on her forehead.

The two people made a public display of affection in front of Emperor Jing.

Seeing this pair of young lovebirds that echoed each other full of mutual understanding, Emperor Jing only felt that his forehead was about to burst, a fit of riled up blood was boiling over.

If, prior to today, Nangong Liuyun was determined to marry this loathsome girl, although he might not be happy, he might also barely accept it, but now.....

Emperor Jing knew he couldn't persuade Nangong Liuyun, so he could only retreat a step and coldly snort at him: "If you really like this loathsome girl, it is not completely out of the question. Taking her as a concubine will be fine, but you absolutely cannot marry her as the princess and main wife."

"Out of the question." Nangong Liuyun straightforwardly refused. Even the position of princess, he already felt it wasn't good enough for Su Luo. If Su Luo wanted, Nangong Liuyun would even help her become an empress.

"Why is it out of the question? Which royal aristocrat doesn't have three wives and four concubines? Why would it be out of the question for you? Are you still listening to this Emperor's words?!"

Who knew that Nangong Liuyun wouldn't buy into it at all, he boldly and righteously spat out a sentence that nearly made Emperor Jing fall down from anger.

One could only see Nangong Liuyun's jet-black, ink-like eyes unblinkingly gaze at Su Luo. His tone was overbearing and intolerant of other's' opinion: "This king

will only take one wife and no concubines.”

A smiling expression appeared in Su Luo’s eyes.

This kind of Nangong Liuyun, how could she refuse him? It was as if he was made to her exact measurements.

Infatuated, tyrannical, single-minded, and the most important thing was that his philosophy was identical to hers.

In these ancient times, like what Emperor Jing said, three wives and four concubines were normal. If Nangong Liuyun had this inclination, no matter how good he was to her, she still wouldn’t have bothered with him.

But now, he clearly, openly and definitely declared his single-minded intent, this made Su Luo put down her last thread of reservation.

She smilingly looked at Nangong Liuyun, such a handsome, overbearing, infatuated and single-minded male. Really was that the more she looked, the more she felt that she had hit the jackpot.

Emperor Jing coldly tossed out a sentence. “Since it is like this, then you guys are absolutely not allowed to marry!”

Chapter 624 – Nangong flipped out (7)

“Why?” Su Luo glared at him, not accepting.

“Because Nangong Liuyun is already engaged! Therefore, he absolutely will not marry you! In the future, you should not try to wrap yourself around second child! Otherwise, we, the Emperor, will not be polite to you!” Emperor Jing’s tone was indescribably firm.

Nangong Liuyun was already engaged?

This sentence was similar to a bomb thrown into the sea, immediately causing a burst of tempestuous waves.

The veins on Nangong Liuyun’s forehead jumped out, his complexion hazy like an approaching storm.

Coldly staring at Emperor Jing, he closed in on the Emperor step by step, stressing each word, and said. “Say it again.”

Being stared at by that bloodthirsty gaze of his, a indescribable fear appeared in Emperor Jing’s heart.

His heart suddenly had an unknown type of fright, therefore, he subconsciously retreated, then retreated again....

“If you have the ability, say it again!” Nangong Liuyun, with one move, grabbed him by the collar.

Emperor Jing completely didn’t expect that following after the Empress, this second child would dare to even move against him!

He, the stately, majestic Emperor, at this moment, his collar was actually being grabbed by someone!

Also, because of exactly this, that touch of fear in his heart dispersed and was

replaced by fury.

One could only see the Emperor smiled coldly: “Yesterday, Father Emperor had already agreed to a marriage for you. Therefore, you don’t have to trouble yourself over it.”

Su Luo frowned slightly: “Li Yaoyao?”

Emperor Jing’s indignant gaze swept towards Su Luo and coldly smiled: “You actually guessed it.”

“Rescind the marriage!” Nangong Liuyun lifted Emperor Jing to the front of a table, took out a brush already dipped in ink, and handed it over to him, “Immediately write the document to rescind the marriage.”

Nangong Liuyun’s strength was great, and Emperor Jing’s hands were pinched until they became extremely painful by him. Exactly because of this, the fury in his heart flourished even more.

“The has marriage already been decided, there is no backing out.” Emperor Jing looked at him with a cold smile, “If you want the Nangong family to withdraw from the royal lineage, then break off this promise of marriage. When the time comes, then you will be the family’s sinner. In the end, when you go to the underworld, see how you will face the ancestors that established the Nangong family!”

Emperor Jing was taking this huge country with ten thousand miles of rivers and mountains to press down on Nangong Liuyun’s body, forcing him with no other choice but to compromise.

However, very clearly, he had underestimated this son’s stubbornness.

“Ten thousand miles of rivers and mountains? Haha, you care, but I certainly don’t care about it.” Nangong Liuyun, with a fierce appearance, laughed evilly as he looked at Emperor Jing who was rigidly fixed to the spot from hearing this short sentence.

“You— you, this unfilial son!” Emperor Jing was so furious that he shouted out loud.

Nangong Liuyun calmly and composedly pointed at the Crown Prince: “If I

really care about the position of Emperor, you think this stupid and incompetent Crown Prince would be able to live till now?”

Emperor Jing was immediately stumped for words, his body swayed and was unable to control himself as he recoiled by two steps.

He originally believed he could threaten Nangong Liuyun with this trump card, but unexpectedly, it doesn't have the slightest use on him, because he absolutely did not care.

And at this moment, the Crown Prince who was mentioned almost jumped up.

“Nangong Liuyun, who are you calling stupid and incompetent? Who are you calling that!” The Crown Prince practically demanded, having been infuriated.

Having grown up till now, there still wasn't anyone who dared to speak this in his presence. But now, Nangong Liuyun showed no quarter as he cursed him out as stupid and incompetent.

“If you aren't stupid, is it possible for you to owe such a huge debt that you couldn't pay even in this lifetime?” Su Luo in annoyance rolled her eyes at him, “A noble person has self-knowledge, Your Highness the Crown Prince, it's still better for you to take a breather. Nangong will not fight over the position of Crown Prince with you.”

“Because he simply feels that it's not worth doing!” Su Luo, in the dark, added another twisted-with-a-knife-like words.

“You— — what does a loathsome girl like you understand!” The Crown Prince wanted to curse her, but found himself without the words, because everything this girl said was true, he couldn't refute it.

“What don't I understand? However, can your Highness the Crown Prince pay back the green-colored crystal stones you still owe me?”

Chapter 625 – Nangong flipped out (8)

“These days, the money I have on hand is a little tight.” Su Luo smilingly looked at him.

Su Luo knew that both Nangong Liuyun and Emperor Jing had stubborn dispositions and that neither was willing to admit defeat. If they continued to fight, then both sides would suffer and this would allow the Crown Prince to pick up some cheap benefits.

As a result, she jested in order to draw this business back to the main point.

Nangong Liuyun tossed Emperor Jing aside and walked to Su Luo’s side. He had both hands looped around his arms as he cast careless, sidelong glances at the crown prince: “Now, you can return the debt, right?”

“I.....” Couldn’t afford to return it.....

The Crown Prince wanted to cry but had no tears, his eyes cast glances towards the Empress and Emperor Jing.

Deducting the costs for those damaged properties, he still had to return more than two thousand green-colored crystal stones, even if you killed him, he still could not afford to pay it back.

“Don’t you have a Treasure Storage Pavillion? You can use other treasures with spirit powers to repay the debt.” Su Luo’s eyes glittered and shined.

She really wanted to bring the little divine dragon along to pick and choose.

Nangong Liuyun nodded his head: “This also sounds good.”

At this moment, Emperor Jing’s heart was extremely angry with Nangong Liuyun. Seeing him and that loathsome girl unite again to bully his Crown Prince, temporarily, his reasoning withdrew, and all of a sudden, a sentence came out: “His Treasure Storage Pavillion can be regarded as fart, if you have the ability,

then go to the Royal Treasure Storage Pavilion!”

When the Crown Prince heard these words, he simply burst with joy, and he immediately ran over to hug Emperor Jing’s thigh: “Father Emperor, your son, this official, thanks you for your saving grace. Even if your son, this official, has to work like an ox and a horse for his entire life, he will repay your generosity!”

Emperor Jing became somewhat stupefied.....

In fact, what he meant to express was not to tell Nangong Liuyun’s party to go to the Royal Treasure Storage Pavillion, rather, he was disdainful that the Crown Prince’s Treasure Storage Pavilion was too small.

More than two thousand green-colored crystal stones, this was not a small number. Even Emperor Jing, himself, momentarily could not take out so many.

Emperor Jing wanted to explain, but discovered that if he was to explain, would he still want an Emperor’s dignity or not?

Emperor Jing sent a very fierce glare at the Crown Prince, his inner rage immediately rushing up.

First, Nangong Liuyun was disobedient to him and did not treat him as the Emperor.

Now, the Crown Prince also cheated him, this father, scheming against him by every means.

Emperor Jing, panting with rage, glared at the Crown Prince, however, he could not say a single word of refusal. This kind of feeling was especially suffocating and depressing.

When Su Luo heard what was said, her eyes momentarily shined.

Indeed, it was like the Emperor had said, compared to the Royal Treasure Storage Pavilion, the Crown Prince’s Treasure Storage Pavillion simply was not even worth a look.

If she were to choose, of course she would choose the Royal Treasure Storage Pavillion.

As a result, Su Luo pretended to be unperturbed and said: “Is the Emperor going to help the Crown Prince repay the debt? This I can actually consider.”

Nangong Liuyun had paid close attention to Su Luo's expression all along, how could he not understand her thoughts?

As a result, Nangong Liuyun, who was always in disagreement with the Crown Prince, suddenly acted in collusion with him.

He pondered, holding his chin, and looked towards Emperor Jing with a frown: "Is Father Emperor willing to repay this debt for the Crown Prince?"

Not waiting for Emperor Jing to reply, Nangong Liuyun indifferently nodded his head: "Giving Father Emperor some face, it can only be so. Could not continuously watch the nation's Crown Prince being hounded to death in front of him, after all, he is still this king's elder brother."

Emperor Jing's expression changed slightly. He wanted to say something, but discovered that Nangong Liuyun had already held Su Luo's hand and walked in the direction of the Royal Treasure Storage Pavillion.

Emperor Jing suddenly returned to his senses. He shouted towards Nangong Liuyun's back: "We, the Emperor, order you to stand still!"

However, Nangong Liyun did not even turn his head and continued to walk away.

"Li Yaoyao's matter, what do you plan to do?!" Emperor Jing's heart was uncertain, he had already agreed to this marriage.

"What else can be done? Whoever agreed to this marriage should marry her." Nangong Liuyun bluntly and decisively tossed out this sentence, afterwards pulling Su Luo along and gradually proceeded further away.

However, this sentence infuriated Emperor Jing to the point of near collapse.

Could this brat even speak with human words or not? His childhood sweetheart, he wanted we, the Emperor, to marry?

Chapter 626 – Nangong flipped out (9)

Although Nangong Liuyun was determined not to recognize his arranged marriage with Li Yaoyao and also insisted on wanting to marry Su Luo instead, but at this moment, Emperor Jing became as stubborn as Nangong Liuyun, this time demanding that he marry Li Yaoyao! This was all a part of an Emperor's dignity!

Not to mention how the Emperor's complexion turned ashen from fury. Let's return to Su Luo and Nangong Liuyun's viewpoint.

The Royal Treasure Storage Pavilion was located in the deepest part of the Imperial Palace, being in the forbidden area. Normally, besides the guarding elder, nobody else was allowed near it.

Seeing those four huge, golden glistening words, the corner of Su Luo's mouth perked up into a smile.

The treasures with spirit force were collected by the entire Nangong clan for many years and placed in the Treasure Storage Pavilion since the establishment of this family. Naturally, the treasures were extremely abundant, simply giving a person great expectations.

In her hands, the greatest shortage was in treasures with strong spirit power. This kind of opportunity was hard to come by, after she entered the Treasure Storage Pavilion, no matter what, she must obtain a few benefits.

Suddenly, from the side, a person's figure floated out.

This was an elderly man whose eyebrows and hair were all white. Looking at his age, he was about seventy to eighty years old. Despite his white hair, his complexion was rosy, appearing extremely hale and hearty in old age.

The number of people Su Luo knew wasn't many, however, this elder, she

unfortunately did recognize.

Nangong Yu.

On that day when she had a duel with Su Qing, he was one of the three judges, and also the only person who gave her troubles.

At that time, Su Luo saw through to the greedy desire he had towards the little divine dragon, thus, her impression of him was not so good. Even now, seeing him guarding the door, her long, shapely eyebrows knitted slightly.

Nangong Yu, with one look, was able to recognize Su Luo.

On that day, the matter of the little divine dragon showing off its divine might left a deep impression on him. However, because the little divine dragon was given by His Highness Prince Jin, whom he could not afford to offend, so he had no other option but to pull back.

At this moment, his attention was all placed on Su Luo's body. His eyes were slightly squinted, with a dangerous aura flashing though its depth.

Unexpectedly, she didn't bring that little thing over here?

"Lead the way ahead." Nangong Liuyun sent a displeased glare at him, coldly throwing out this sentence.

Nangong Yu's expression did not change, his eyes remained tranquil without a single ripple. He nodded his head, and moved forward to lead the way.

The him right now seemed very well-behaved.

While walking, Nangong Liuyun said to Su Luo: "This kind of opportunity is hard to come by, do not waste it. After entering, we will be sent to different rooms, therefore, I won't be able to help you."

Nangong Liuyun paused for a while, then continued: "Inside this Treasure Storage Pavilion, there are many treasures acquired by my ancestors during their travels around the world. Whether you can get a huge windfall, will all depend on your foresight and luck."

"Do you think my luck could possibly be bad?" Su Luo smilingly looked at him.

Nangong Liuyun paused, then with a smile, he rubbed her head: "It seems like I

was worried over nothing.”

Inside the room with the gateway, there was a bright, white circular diagram.

The Treasure Storage Pavilion did not have doors nor windows, every time someone entered or left, they must pass through this mysterious teleportation array.

It was rumored that this teleportation array was created by the founding ancestor of the Nangong family back in the day.

This ancestor’s story was extremely rich and colorful, like all legendary tales. If pen and paper was used to describe it, even millions of words would not be enough.

The moment she passed through this teleportation array, Su Luo knew that Nangong Ancestor was definitely a space mage, and was also the supreme expert kind.

Following the wake of two brilliant white flashes, Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo disappeared on the spot.

Nangong Yu watched the two silhouettes that disappeared, his eyes flashing with a trace of dissatisfaction.

He was one of the people that protected and guarded the surroundings, and never had the qualifications to enter the pavilion.

Seeing that in front of him was a mountain of treasure inside, but he could not enter, this kind of feeling was too stiflingly depressing. It was similar to having his heart gnawed and bitten by a poisonous insect, making him feel extremely unwell.

Just now, Emperor Jing sent a single word in secret.....

If.....

Seeing the white light remaining after Su Luo disappeared, a cold smile flashed through Nangong Yu’s eyes.

Chapter 627 – Treasure Storage Pavilion (1)

Standing in the circle of light, Su Luo only felt her mind being dazed. When she opened her eyes again, the surrounding scenery had already changed.

Su Luo opened her eyes and felt that the light in front of her eyes were exceptionally glaring. She couldn't help but to use her hands to cover her eyes.

Only after a good while was she able to adapt to the light here.

Su Luo raised her head, and swept her eyes in all four directions.

Right now, appearing in front of her was a huge cave.

Inside the cave, there were rows of yellow rosewood shelves arranged neatly and in an orderly manner.

On the shelves, the treasures with spirit force were arranged by categories, the surroundings were all bathed in rays of light, like the stars in the sky, twinkling and dazzling.

This cave gave Su Luo a feeling somewhat resembling a modern supermarket. It gave her a familiar feeling.

Su Luo carefully examined everything and noticed that the area of this cave wasn't really big. It was probably about several hundred square meters in dimension.

However, she thought about it slightly and understood.

Nangong Liuyun and her were not in the same room, this showed that there were at least more than two rooms inside the Royal Treasure Storage Pavilion.

“This is the Nangong clan's Treasure Storage Pavilion? Isn't it rather too rich?” Su Luo's eyes looked all around.

Every single spirit treasure was wrapped up by a layer of dim light, appearing

very captivating.

Just when Su Luo was lamenting, the little divine dragon inside her space poked his head out.

“Awoo, awoo——” the little divine dragon, seeing the spirit treasures around, suddenly opened his little mouth.

She only heard the sound of something breaking, and when Su Luo opened her eyes again to look, the light wrapped around the spirit treasures, without exception, had all disappeared.

Su Luo, startled, opened her eyes wide and poked at the little divine dragon’s head: “What did you do?”

The little divine dragon jumped up two or three times in Su Luo’s embrace. Expressing his wishes by gently rubbing his plump little belly, he mumbled pitifully to Su Luo: “Hungry…….”

“Just a while ago, those clouds of spiritual energy were all absorbed by you, yet you are still hungry?” Su Luo woke up to reality from being dazzled, grabbing the little divine dragon and scowling directly at him.

Those spiritual energy lingering around the surrounding spirit treasures were the essence and best feature of this place. After losing it, the formidable power it had would weaken greatly.

However, the little divine dragon, in one breath, had absorbed it all. If this was seen by Nangong Family’s ancestor, very likely, he would catch the little divine dragon and make him into stew.

Unexpectedly, the little divine dragon himself didn’t seem to be aware of this being his fault. He grabbed Su Luo’s hands and placed it on his soft belly, deflated his small mouth pitifully, and anxiously and impatiently looked at Su Luo: “Still hungry…….”

That soft and yielding tiny appearance was extremely adorable, making others pity him while also being affectionate towards him. It made people wish that they could deliver all the good things under Heaven to him.

“However, all of these have been swallowed by you, you tell me, what’s to be

done?” Su Luo’s spread out both hands, expressing her helplessness.

Originally, among these spirit treasures were a few items that she fancied, but now, since their effectiveness had been weakened greatly, she naturally would not take them.

However, this was also part of the little divine dragon’s luck, only he could absorb these spiritual energy, even she could not absorb them.

The little divine dragon crooked his head and thought for a while. Afterwards, he extended his little fingers and pointed up ahead.

Su Luo’s face had an awkward expression, because the place in front that the little divine dragon pointed to was a hard rock wall. She didn’t have the ability to pass through walls.

Who would have thought that this time the little divine dragon would be especially stubborn, determinedly and persistently saying: “Treasure, treasure, many many treasures....”

With regards to the little divine dragon’s ability to find treasure, Su Luo absolutely believed in it.

“Then fine, let’s try to find the exit.” Su Luo placed the little divine dragon on the floor. She carefully studied that glossy-as-jade wall by herself.

Outside the Treasure Storage Pavilion.

Inside a tiny room.

Nangong Yu sat cross-legged, in front of him was a fist-sized crystal ball.

At this moment, a small black dot appeared on the wall.

Chapter 628 – Treasure Storage Pavilion (2)

The corner of Nangong Yu's mouth evoked into a cold smile: "Loathsome girl, you actually have a little bit of insight. Originally, His Majesty intended for you to choose a few from these outside spirit treasures, letting you take get a small bit of advantage to call it even."

"However, a thousand, no, ten thousand times you ought not to be so greedy like this. You actually dared to move the most valuable treasures in the inner section. How could that place be somewhere that you, as an insignificant fourth rank, can enter?"

"That sealed door, if it is broken by force, you will suffer from the strong recoil bit left behind by Nangong Elder Ancestor. Unless you know the method to enter or is a space mage."

"Therefore, loathsome girl, you should just wait to die!"

Nangong Yu thought up to here, and the corner of his mouth hooked into a sinister smile. His eyes closed a bit as he entered the cultivation state.

Exactly because his eyes were closed slightly, so, he didn't see the single black dot that was there suddenly change into two.

Within the Treasure Storage Pavilion.

Su Luo was facing this slippery and smooth wall with simply no way out.

"Are there really treasures inside there?" Su Luo crouched down with a powerless expression as she poked the little divine dragon's head.

She had studied it for a long time, the top of this wall was bare with nothing on it.

However, the little divine dragon still seriously nodded his little head: "There is, there is, there is!"

“Does your inherited memories have information on how to decipher this doorless wall?” Su Luo patiently asked him.

The little divine dragon stood in the original place with his head crooked at an angle as he pondered. His face was perplexed and also very innocent, like a confused little kid. Seeing him like this made a person’s heart soften.

Su Luo had a lot of patience, all along waiting for the little divine dragon’s response. She even told him not to be anxious.

After a long while, the little divine dragon’s eyes suddenly brightened. He animatedly grabbed Su Luo’s hand.

“Oh? You found a way?” Su Luo saw a mystical light flash through the little divine dragon’s eyes, wasn’t this rather a little too fast?”

The little divine dragon nodded excitedly.

One could only see his tiny nimble body jump onto Su Luo’s arm, suddenly grab Su Luo’s forefinger, and use it to press at a particular location on the wall.

Su Luo’s palm was placed against the wall and felt the ice-cold touch the wall gave her, but couldn’t find the slightest bit of usefulness.

“In, input—” The little divine dragon seemed like a little teacher, standing upon Su Luo’s shoulder and directing her.

Input? Input what? Could it be inputting spirit force?

Due to her confidence in the little divine dragon, Su Luo slowly gathered the spirit force in her body together and transmitted it into the wall through the palm of her hand.

Su Luo inputted the spirit force into the wall. When her spirit force ran into the wall, it was like a raindrop falling into the ocean. In a flash, it would disappear without a trace.

Unexpectedly, there was no reaction?

Su Luo felt that this was extremely odd.

She did not believe that this devilishly huge input would not work. But the continuous stream of spirit force she inputted were all absorbed by the wall!

In addition, she could feel that the spirit force the wall needed was far from being met.

Just when Su Luo was being distracted, suddenly, she felt a touch of extremely dangerous aura coming from the depths of the wall.

Su Luo's heart was shocked from horror, subconsciously, she withdrew the palm of her hand.

"This method doesn't work." Su Luo helplessly shook her head towards the little divine dragon.

Her sixth sense had always been accurate, she felt that if she was to continue inputting more spirit force, probably, something very bad would occur.

Since the little divine dragon determined that there were treasures inside, Su Luo naturally believed it one hundred percent.

Merely, that riches and honor were sought amidst danger, how could a treasure be so easily picked up?

Su Luo pondered while supporting her chin and paced around in front of that smooth, glossy wall.

The little divine dragon had his tail raised, his clear, monochrome, huge and limpid eyes watching Su Luo. His pitch-black pupils swayed, following along her movements.

It seemed as if his expression was extremely confused.

The dragon race usually had inherited memories.

Chapter 629 – Treasure Storage Pavilion (3)

And his inherited memory had told him, just place your hand on the wall and you could enter...how could it not have worked? Where was the problem? The little divine dragon patted his own head, no matter how much he thought, he could not understand.

Su Luo's forehead knotted slightly, with a heavy expression, she sank into deep thought.

She started to ponder from problem of opening a path from the beginning, bit by bit, recalling everything inside the Treasure Storage Pavilion, trying to find the trick within.

In the beginning, she first stood within the transparent diagram, having been delivered inside this room....

Huh, the transparent diagram, teleportation array!

Suddenly, a light flashed through Su Luo's brain, and her eyes shone abruptly.

How could she have forgotten?

At that time, the Elder Ancestor that established the Nangong family, he was one of the rare space mage on this continent.

This wall created by that legendary space mage was definitely not easily found by a person, perhaps... inside, there was the power of space.

Su Luo finally felt that her own mind was opened wide.

Anyway, no matter whether it will work or not, she'll know if she give it a try.

Su Luo thought about it, then used large strides to walk to the front of the wall and pressed her palm against that bright and clean wall. Then, she applied her space powers.

In the beginning, the wall was still as undisturbed as before.

However, with the passing of the time, with more and more spirit force, the space powers became more and more full. Finally, all of a sudden, a buzzing sound resounded....

Success!

A happy expression flashed through Su Luo's eyes.

Suddenly, a bright white light appeared around Su Luo's body, just at this critical moment, the little divine dragon, with one leap, jumped up. His two little paws grabbed hold of Su Luo's thigh.

Just when he grabbed hold of Su Luo, her figure disappeared in a flash from within this room.

Su Luo felt a burst of dizziness and her vision blurred, when she opened her eyes again, the surrounding scene had changed greatly once again.

Was this the place behind the wall?

Su Luo originally thought she would be met with danger, she had even taken a fighting position. But, in front of eyes, was completely empty with nothing here.

She dropped her fighting position, and started to size up this place that she had been mistakenly transferred to and accidentally entered.

This was a cave.

Compared to the room outside, this place was much bigger.

The surroundings were completely empty without a single shelf, thus, it was even less likely to see the spirit treasures on the shelves.

In fact, Su Luo didn't know, this inner room was the place where the most precious treasures were stored that had been collected over the years from the Empire.

Emperor Jing would never have imagined that Su Luo would be able to enter the inner room of the Treasure Storage Pavilion. Because, this place was very much a secret, even Emperor Jing himself had only heard of the existence of this treasure storage room through legends. However, he could not enter because he

didn't have space powers.

Just when Su Luo was staring blankly, from up in front came the sound of the little divine dragon barking 'awoo'.

Su Luo looked and immediately laughed.

Didn't know what mechanism the little divine dragon had set off, but now, in mid-air, little cloud-like spheres had appeared. Moreover, the little cloud-like spheres were wrapped around spirit treasures that people would yearn for even in their dreams.

The brilliant, dazzling rays of light on the spirit treasures now seemed extremely gorgeous.

At this moment, the little divine dragon had pounced up to a little cloud-like sphere and was barking loudly at the thing inside.

Su Luo diverted power to her foot, borrowing its strength to jump up. After seeing clearly the stuff inside, even she exclaimed in astonishment.

It was a dagger.

Through the transparent cloud-like sphere, Su Luo could clearly see the two words carved onto the handle of the dagger: Yan Hua (1)

Yan Hua? This name...Su Luo felt it was somewhat familiar, but couldn't recall where she might have seen it before.

But seeing the little divine dragon's impatient appearance, Su Luo just knew, this dagger was certainly a treasure.

Su Luo's original dagger was destroyed when she tried to kill Li Aotian on the barren island with deserted mountains. Nowadays, she was only using an ordinary dagger.

1) Yan Hua – The chinese words for beautiful and splendid/flowery.

Chapter 630 – Treasure Storage Pavilion (4)

She was just thinking of finding some time to look for a good dagger at an auction house, now that she was thinking about it, she just so happened to encounter it.

This was truly like about to doze off and someone would deliver a pillow, it couldn't be better.

Su Luo was very happy, and reached out with her hand to take it. However, she was stunned to discover that she was unable to take it.

These small, cloud-like spheres seemed like the simplest kind of covering to protect against the rain, but were firmly protecting the treasures. Making it that even if other people coveted them, there was no way for them to take it away.

Seeing the spirit treasure that she liked in front of her eyes, but no matter what, she couldn't even take it out, this really felt extremely unpleasant.

Su Luo's eyes twinkled like the stars.

Since she had already entered the secret inner room of the Treasure Storage Pavilion, then she shouldn't just enter this mountain of treasures and return empty-handed.

Su Luo thought, at that time, the Nangong family's Ancestor who was a space mage, this Elder used space element to make a door look like a wall, in that case, these cloud-like spheres, could they be related to space element?

Su Luo's eyes twinkled like starlight.

Regardless of what was said, it couldn't be wrong to try.

Su Luo gathered her space system power, stuck her palms on the cloud-like

spheres, and continuously pouring the force of space into it.

However..... There was no response.

Adding more, there was still no response.

By the time Su Luo's brows were beaded with sweat, there still was no reaction from these cloud-like spheres.

Su Luo was helpless, apparently, space element was not the key to unravel this cage, then what was the key to breaking through this?

Su Luo powerlessly pounded on these transparent-yet-extremely-hard, cloud-like spheres up high, while gloomily sighing.

Soon after, she tried to take the entire cloud-like spheres with the treasures inside into her space, but what made Su Luo depressed was, these cloud-like spheres, imperceptibly seemed to have a kind of strange force that fixed them in place. She simply could not take them into her space.

About ten of these cloud-like spheres were suspended in mid-air, if she could not even take this one, then there was no point in thinking about the rest.

At the moment, Su Luo's only hope was placed on the little divine dragon's body.

The little divine dragon's perplexed small face, faced these small, cloud-like spheres as he looked at them left and right, up and down.

He tried to scratch them with his claws, but discovered that his claws were useless.

He tried to puff out flames, water and all kinds of elements, but as before, it was all useless.

What's to be done?

The divine dragon grabbed his ear and scratched his cheek, looking exceedingly depressed.

Having thought hard and still couldn't think of a way, the little divine dragon became angry. Facing these cloud-like spheres, he simply bit down.

Su Luo saw this and hurriedly lifted the little divine dragon back up: "Careful,

don't break your teeth ah, this is very hard.....”

Su Luo's words still weren't finished yet.....

Afterwards, a scene that stunned Su Luo occurred.

The little divine dragon bit down a mouthful, then, these small, cloud-like spheres were like a white steamed bun, suddenly lacking a corner.

“This way is also possible?” Su Luo was simply speechless. What kind of thing was the little divine dragon's teeth ah! This kind of hard stuff and he could actually bite it?

Su Luo might simply just worship the little divine dragon's teeth.

The little divine dragon smiled towards Su Luo as if taking credit for an achievement. Afterwards, he just buried his head in these small, cloud-like spheres, unceasingly biting down and swallowing.

The little dragon's bite was not fast at all, but the small mouth was, nevertheless, continuously moving.

Very quickly, one could see that that cloud-like sphere was missing a corner. In addition, this corner, in the wake of the little divine dragon's nibbling and biting, continued to become bigger.

Su Luo saw that the little divine dragon directly swallowed what he bit out, and she couldn't help but be somewhat worried: “Can you eat this?”

“Supplement, great supplement.” The little divine dragon excitedly nodded, his two little claws holding the small, cloud-like spheres and once again immersed in pigging out.

The corner of Su Luo's mouth pursed slightly.

Who could have anticipated, that these cloud-like spheres protecting the spirit treasures, with regards to the little divine dragon, was a great supplement?

Su Luo confiscated a tiny piece, and tested it on herself to see if it was a supplement for her.

Chapter 631 – Treasure Storage Pavilion (5)

But she had just put it into her mouth, and then immediately spit it out.

“Pooh, pooh, pooh.” Su Luo hurriedly spit it out.

Fortunately, she didn't use a lot of strength to bite it, otherwise, all of her teeth would have fallen off.

Su Luo saw the little divine dragon's speed in gnawing at it was not that fast, and as a result, she let him work on it peacefully. She herself was flying in mid-air, choosing spirit treasures she needed.

Su Luo was very clear that she was unable to carry away all of the spirit treasures.

Treasure Storage Room, no matter who it was, after entering for one day, you must come out. Otherwise, the teleportation array would automatically shut down.

With the little divine dragon's nibbling speed, within a day, the most she could carry out were three items of spirit treasures.

The dagger was one item, the remaining two items she must select very carefully.

Therefore, within this completely empty cave, besides the little divine dragon's rat-like chewing-on-sugarcane snapping sounds, was Su Luo's figure that flew in the sky.

The precious treasures here, every one of them was awfully attractive to people.

Advanced grade medicinal pill, secret martial arts instruction manuals, high grade weapons, every item made Su Luo's heartbeat with eagerness.

After some consideration, Su Luo settled upon the wood element martial instruction manual as the second item.

Among her three elements, she had a lot of harvest in the Purple Fish Place from last time for her fire system and her space system. The only exception was the wood system, because there was a lack of secret books of knowledge. As a result, up until now, she hadn't cultivated the wood element.

Therefore, this time, Su Luo, without the slightest hesitation, was set on the advanced wood element secret instruction manual as her second treasure item.

As for the third item....Spirit Pinball!

Seeing this spirit pinball, all kinds of sad feelings rushed up into Su Luo's heart.

On that day, because of the little divine dragon's treasure hunting ability, therefore, she was able to dig out a spirit pinball. However, when she used it, she actually smashed Li Aotian into a seventh rank expert!

At that time, it really destroyed her until her intestines were green.

Now, seeing this still dark spirit pinball, lying there, still and unmoving, in a white-colored little cloud-like sphere, Su Luo's heart had a slight but bad feeling.

However, no matter what, this spirit pinball was a weapon that could be used to save her life. Moreover, this spirit pinball seemed to be stronger by another level compared to the one before.

After considering it back and forth, Su Luo finally still decided to pick this spirit pinball.

Waiting until the little divine dragon had finished gnawing on these three cloud-like spheres, his belly had already inflated to become even more plump. Now, he was very drowsy, like a roly-poly toy he couldn't stand up steadily.

Su Luo, seeing this, merely collected him into her space to avoid disturbing him.

Last time, the little divine dragon's cultivation made huge advancement after the event. Didn't know if this time, he would have the same good luck, Su Luo's heart was hopeful and expectant.

Holding the three spirit treasures, Su Luo easily withdrew from this secret

inner room made from space powers.

One could see now, in a dark cave, Su Luo once again appear in the first room she started off in.

Whereas outside.

Before, when Nangong Yu saw Su Luo's figure disappear from the crystal ball, his mouth had hooked into a maliciously cold laugh.

Trying to enter Nangong clan's real and most valuable treasure pavilion, the result of being greedy was only the path to death.

Just when Nangong Yu was twirling his white beard in an extremely good mood, all of a sudden, that little black dot once again appeared on the crystal ball.

That smiling expression on Nangong Yu's face immediately became rigid.

His eyes were opened wide, staring fixedly at that continuously moving little black dot, with fists clenched firmly.

How could it be like this?

Clearly, that loathsome girl had triggered the mechanism on the wall. If she had used brute force to open it, she absolutely would be bitten by the recoil from Elder Ancestor's martial force.

But...How was it that nothing happened to her?

No matter how much Nangong Yu thought, he could not understand. He thought about it until his head was in pain.

Now, Su Luo somewhat hesitantly stood inside the room in the Treasure Storage Pavilion, seeing the treasures in her hand, her expression was somewhat indecisive.

The value of these three spirit treasures were more than sufficient to make up for the one thousand five hundred pieces of green-colored crystal stones.

Chapter 632 – Treasure Storage Pavilion (6)

But she clearly had the space element, should she.....

Su Luo's gaze swept around the surroundings once.

Suddenly, the corner of Su Luo's mouth raised into a smile.

No, she would take the things out openly like this. Even if others were to know, then what?

After all, it was from Emperor Jing to compensate her on behalf of the Crown Prince, she had no qualms about taking it.

If Emperor Jing was infuriated to death, then let him die of anger. It's just perfect if he died from being enraged.

Su Luo directly took those three things and went out.

Su Luo didn't know, precisely because of this notion of hers, which allowed her ensuing days to have fewer twists and turns.

Because Nangong Yu knew Su Luo had entered the inside room of the pavilion. In addition, the news of the inside room of the pavilion having lost three treasures would very quickly spread out.

Therefore, if Su Luo had placed the three spirit treasures in her space, then it would very easily raise Nangong Yu's suspicions.

Once he spread this news out, Su Luo would not have any peaceful days afterwards.

Su Luo was totally unaware that she had unintentionally escaped a calamity. At this moment, she was holding the spirit treasures and standing in the teleportation array.

A burst of black rays of light flashed through her eyes, and Su Luo was already

standing at the large doorway.

Facing her was the extremely unsightly face of Nangong Yu.

Nangong Yu's eyes flickered with chilliness, rigidly staring at Su Luo with an ice-cold expression, probingly sizing her up.

Being stared at with this kind of expression, Su Luo had a feeling of being watched closely by a poisonous snake.

The corner of Su Luo's mouth rose into an indifferent smile: "Could Elder Nangong have an objection to me?"

What Nangong Yu couldn't understand at all, was how she escaped that calamity. He stared blankly, his indifferent voice carrying a certain tone: "You entered the most valuable treasure pavilion."

Su Luo's figure slightly paused.

Nangong Yu actually knew? Could it be that there was also some kind of monitoring device or such inside?

Then, when the little divine dragon had appeared out of thin air, wouldn't it be.....

A sliver of icy-coldness flashed through Su Luo's heart, but her face was calm and collected, unperturbed like water, as she said, "Elder Nangong even knew of this?"

"How did you enter?" These words that Nangong Yu said made Su Luo feel relieved.

Since Nangong Yu hadn't seen how she entered the most valuable treasure pavilion, then, he naturally wouldn't know about the matter of her body containing the space element.

Su Luo indifferently showed a shallow smile: "Why is Elder Nangong's complexion so unsightly? Could it be that I shouldn't have entered that place?"

Su Luo didn't answer his question, rather, she had changed the topic.

Nangong Yu's complexion was bad, his sinister gaze stared fixedly at the three spirit treasures Su Luo was holding.

“Don’t tell me that I really shouldn’t have entered? Could it be that the treasures I brought out from there does not count?” Su Luo used retreat to advance while smiling happily and asked.

If she truly couldn’t take it away, Nangong Yu would have immediately snatched away her spirit treasures, wherefore would he waste so much nonsense talk with her?

Su Luo obviously knew where she stood, this was called having gotten some benefit and still flaunting it.

Nangong Yu’s heart was full of anger, the fists at his side were firmly clenched.

Although he didn’t know how this loathsome girl could come out safely after entering. However, that mechanism on the wall was secretly lowered by him to the lowest level, so as to get this loathsome girl to dig her own grave.

But, at present..... Not only hadn’t it killed this loathsome girl, instead, he even let her have a rather plentiful harvest. This was called couldn’t steal a chicken but instead even handed out some rice.

Seeing that Nangong Yu’s complexion was between greenish-black and red, a sense of danger flashed through Su Luo’s heart.

The surroundings had bands of extremely strong spirit aura, clearly concealing countless experts from the Nangong family.

These people does not have even a little bit of friendship to her, if Nangong Yu moved against her at this moment, then.....

Just when Nangong Yu’s finger was about to move slightly, Su Luo suddenly smiled, loudly asking: “Where is Nangong Liuyun? How come he still hasn’t come out yet?”

Chapter 633 – Treasure Storage Pavilion (7)

Su Luo deliberately raised her voice.

‘Nangong Liuyun’, these words, immediately stopped Nangong Yu’s slight movement.

Just at this moment, the doorway swayed a little as a person’s figure slowly appeared.

Nangong Liuyun’s mouth had a smile, but his eyes that watched Nangong Yu narrowed dangerously.

Nangong Yu retreated a step, bowed and made his salute: “Your Highness Prince Jin.”

Nangong Liuyun gave a cold snort, didn’t even acknowledge him and took large strides to walk towards Su Luo.

“How was it? Are you satisfied with your harvest?” Nangong Liuyun’s incomparably handsome face carried a touch of tender feelings. His elegant, bony finger hooked her nose.

“At least, unlikely to be inferior to yours.” Su Luo pointed to what she was holding in a flaunting manner, “However, don’t know if these will exceed the one thousand five hundred green-colored crystal stones’ range.”

Now, Nangong Yu’s viper-like gaze stared fixedly at Su Luo.

However, Su Luo merely handed the three spirit treasures over to him, and smilingly said: “Elder Nangong, please give an estimate.”

Nangong Yu nodded his head and carefully examined these three spirit treasures, his lowered eyes flashing with greedy intent.

Not mentioning the other things, just that spirit pinball alone was enough to

make Nangong Yu green with envy.

Su Luo might not know, but he was very clear, this was the condensed spirit force of a ninth ranked expert before his death.

The entire Nangong clan, merely had two such ninth ranked spirit pinballs that were passed down for many years. But now, this loathsome girl actually took away one so openly, if His Majesty was to know....

Nangong Yu couldn't even imagine it, how infuriated Emperor Jin would become after finding out.

Nangong Yu pondered over the spirit pinball with an indifferent voice, saying: "This spirit pinball, at the very least, will require one thousand green-colored crystal stones. Considering His Highness Prince Jin's face, then I'll just record it as one thousand crystal stones."

Nangong Liuyun's expression condensed slightly, but he didn't say anything.

Ninth ranked spirit pinball, its value was hard to assess, there was always a price but no market for it. Therefore, Nangong Yu's appraisal of one thousand green-colored crystal stones also could not be said to be too excessive.

Su Luo's eyebrows knotted slightly, seeing that Nangong Liuyun didn't speak, she also endured it.

"Then, the remaining two items?" Su Luo unhappily asked.

Nangong Yu picked up that book of secret martial knowledge for wood element, a trace of chilliness flashing through his expression.

Inherently, he was also a wood element mage, this secret book was the most attractive to him. But now, in contrast, this loathsome girl had picked it up so cheaply, his heart was unwilling.

Nangong Yu indifferently said: "This book of secret martial laws for the wood element is at least eight hundred green-colored crystals."

Only with such a high prince would his heart feel slightly balanced.

Su Luo frowned.

Originally, she only had a limit of one thousand five hundred pieces. Just now,

the spirit pinball was quoted as one thousand pieces, this wood element secret martial laws was another eight hundred pieces. This was already above the limits ah.

Was Nangong Yu toying with her?

A touch of annoyance flashed through Su Luo's eyes, had she known earlier, she would have placed them in her space and carried it away with her.

Seeing Su Luo frown, Nangong Liuyun's expression was still as indifferent as before, and pointed to the last item, the dagger.

"This dagger, this king will quote a price in your place, let's say seven hundred green-colored crystal stones." Nangong Liuyun's tone was overbearing, to the extent of not allowing any refusal.

Nangong Yu originally did not agree, but faced with that pair of deep, ice-cold eyes, his heart suddenly dropped.

His eyes were not only freezing cold, they also had a cynical connotation, a murderous aura that made people tremble in fear...Nangong Yu quickly nodded his head.

His Highness Prince Jin's eyes were too deep and too bright, as if the deepest and darkest parts of his heart were illuminated, forcing his secrets out with nowhere to hide.

Nangong Yu clenched his fist tightly, but could only nod: "Okay."

Nangong Yu restrained the fear in his heart and respectfully said to Nangong Liuyun: "Don't know what kind of spirit treasure did Your Highness Prince Jin choose?"

Chapter 634 – Treasure Storage Pavilion (8)

Nangong Liuyun cast a cynical glance at him, pulled Su Luo along and just left.

“Your Highness——” Nangong Yu called Nangong Liuyun to a stop, pointing to Su Luo and said: “Miss Su must leave behind two spirit treasures, her credit wasn’t enough.”

Su Luo nodded, her credit was indeed not enough.

Nangong Liuyun however, indifferently snorted, only leaving Nangong Yu with a decisive view of his back: “This king has not selected anything.”

The implication, naturally, was to transfer his credit to Su Luo.

“Don’t you feel that you have lost out?” Su Luo looked up, her clear eyes reflected that matchless-under-the-heavens, handsome face of Nangong Liuyun’s.

Clearly, Nangong Yu had deliberately raised the price, obviously, they could have haggled over the price.

Nangong Liuyun was amused as he pinched the tip of her nose: “Being too insatiable is very bad.”

“Where am I being insatiable?” She simply didn’t want to suffer a loss.

Nangong Liuyun secretly sighed again: “You, this girl, the things in the most valuable treasure pavilion are certainly not something you want to take away, then can carry away.”

“You mean that Nangong Yu deliberately raised the price, making it difficult for me to retreat and avoid defeat?”

“You are actually not stupid.” Nangong Liuyun smilingly looked at her, his eyes were full of a pampering and spoiling expression.

Su Luo frowned slightly.

When Nangong Liuyun came out, he simply didn't choose any spirit treasure. Perhaps, he had already anticipated from the start that Nangong Yu would demand an exorbitant price, like a lion with its mouth wide open?

Perhaps..... even forcing Emperor Jin to open the Royal Treasure storage pavilion was something he had also planned for from the beginning?

If it was like this, then Nangong Liuyun's shrewdness was truly too deep. If you chose to be his enemy, how painfully difficult a matter would that be?

"Take good care of this spirit pinball, at a critical time, it can protect your life." Nangong Liuyun especially pointed to the spirit pinball, soon after, he rubbed her head and exclaimed: "You, this girl, you have offended too many people."

Furthermore, each and every one of them were stronger than her, it really made him worry endlessly.

"You already knew from the beginning, right?" Su Luo still finally asked, "You forced Emperor Jing to open the Treasure Storage pavilion, precisely to let me get this spirit pinball?"

Nangong Liuyun knew that she was a space mage, therefore, when they entered the Treasure Storage pavilion, he had given her a gentle push, pushing her into that room.

Recalling the things from before, Su Luo couldn't help but to guess this. Moreover, the more she thought about it, the more she felt it was correct.

The corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth perked up into a demonically charming expression: "A girl that is too clever isn't cute."

"This Miss doesn't take the cute route." Su Luo rolled her eyes in annoyance.

Although he didn't directly reply to her question, he indirectly gave her an answer.

"Also, only you, would defraud your own family to give me this advantage."

"As long as you like it, then it's fine." Nangong Liuyun smilingly looked at her, the corner of his mouth hooked into a devilishly charming smile that could entice all living things.

Two people, talking and laughing, walked away from the imperial palace hand in hand.

After they had left, Nangong Yu put on a brave face to give the news to Emperor Jing.

“What did you say?!” Emperor Jing, who originally had his head drooping down, depressed, immediately jumped a meter high. He grabbed Nangong Yu’s collar: “Say that again to I, your daddy!”

Because of extreme anger, Emperor Jing even cursed vulgarly.

“That loathsome girl.....entered the most valuable treasure pavilion.....and took, took away, three spirit, spirit treasures.....” Nangong Yu’s head hung low as he nervously spoke.

“Didn’t I order you to seize this opportunity to kill her? You moron! How could you do something so stupid! You still allowed her to take away three spirit treasures and withdraw safely!” Emperor Jing nearly went insane from rage!

“In the end, how did she safely enter the most valuable treasure pavilion and take away those spirit treasures? And then safely leave?”

Regarding this question from Emperor Jing, Nangong Yu was also quite suspicious: “Could it be that.....that loathsome girl is.....a space mage?”

Chapter 635 – Treasure Storage Pavilion (9)

There was only this kind of explanation.

It couldn't help but be said that Nangong Yu, you hit upon the truth.

However, Emperor Jing clearly didn't believe it.

“Utter rubbish!” Emperor Jing angrily rebuked: “If she really was a space mage, how could she have concealed it up until now? Su Zian would have already made it known loudly to all under the heavens like a cicada!”

A space mage, how distinguished was one? If they, the court, were informed, then the entire Su Manor would not be able to run away from the riches and honor.

“Then.....” Nangong Yu was puzzled.

“Second child, it must be him!” Emperor Jing angrily roared, “It must be second child's sinister plot!”

“What should we do now?”

Emperor Jing heavily slapped the table: “Dispatch people to secretly monitor that loathsome girl, find an opportunity to make her——”

Emperor Jing made a slicing off gesture.

Nangong Yu accepted the order and departed.

At this moment, it seemed as if Emperor Jing had finished venting his anger, his body slumping onto the red sandalwood chair behind him.

If it wasn't for the Jade Lake's Li family pressuring him so tightly, he, in fact also didn't want to do that to Su Luo.

After all, the news reported to him regarding her, she at such a young age was already a fourth rank. Moreover, she had exceed the young talented Su Qing and

force her to that stage.

This was a talent ah, what Eastern Ling lacked the most, were talented people.

However— —The Jade Lake's Li family truly pressured him too tightly, he really hadn't expected, that the Li family would even threaten the four nations battle competition over this matter of connection by marriage.

If the Jade Lake's Li family withdrew from the four nations battle competition, then Eastern Ling would certainly lose. Furthermore, Eastern Ling would be defeated miserably!

No, he absolutely wouldn't allow this kind of thing to happen during his rule. Therefore, Nangong Liuyun, this time, most certainly will marry Li Yaoyao.

Emperor Jing's heart was set on this, no matter what methods he must use, he must make Nangong Liuyun and Li Yaoyao into a couple. He wouldn't even mind using what he hated the most, that of the rice having been cooked (1)

Emperor Jing had this kind of secretive and devious plan to break up Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo.

The Jade Lake's Li Family also hadn't stopped for a rest.

Since last time, after the battle between the two sisters from Su Manor, the capital entered a tranquil state.

Rather, this day, suddenly, an explosive piece of news was passed along.

The Jade Lake's fairy had come to the Imperial Capital!

This news was like a stone dropped into a tranquil, mirror-like lake. Immediately, all the people in the entire imperial capital flared up.

How great was the Jade Lake's fairy ah!

That was the Jade Lake's Li family's most distinguished little princess!

Furthermore, she was gifted since childhood with extraordinary martial arts. Even more important was that beautiful appearance of hers which was matchless under the heavens. That exceedingly refined temperament..... She was simply like a fairy from the ninth layer of heaven, above all the common people!

Momentarily, everyone in the imperial capital spread the news, and the news spread continuously, raising the Jade Lake's fairy to the level of a myth.

Didn't know if there was also someone adding fuel to the fire. Unexpectedly, there was a rumor that said that the Jade Lake's fairy and His Highness Prince Jin had already been engaged since long ago.

Once this news spread, immediately, the fervent atmosphere once again was pushed up like the morning tide.

His Highness Prince Jin, the Jade Lake's fairy.

One was unsurpassed in martial arts, the other was gifted.

One was matchless handsome, the other was devastatingly beautiful.

One was unyielding and noble, the other was pure and cold like a lotus.

Whether it was talent, appearance or temperament, both of them were the most outstanding among the younger generation.

Moreover, they were also childhood sweethearts, growing up together as brother and sister since childhood under the same teacher!

Following the rounds of information erupting, the imperial capital was lifted by bursts of frenzy.

Everyone was saying that His Highness Prince Jin and the Jade Lake's fairy were a match made in heaven. There were none who were more well-suited than them.

Now, it seemed as if everyone had forgotten about Su Luo.

Everyone was fervently talking about His Highness Prince Jin and the Jade Lake's fairy. They were discussing how well-matched they were, what an ideal couple they were, how they were a match made in heaven.....As if they were witnesses that had given evidence to this.

1) The rice having been cooked: Otherwise known as getting pregnant, a plot for a shotgun marriage.

Chapter 636 – Dispute in a love triangle (1)

Inside the Wisteria courtyard.

Lu Luo was busy with the tasks on hand, but would always raise her head to anxiously look at her Miss.

Since the Miss had gotten up in morning, she had sit under the wisteria tree to read. Now, six hours had already passed.

Su Luo was calm and composed, in contrast to Lu Luo who was very much scatterbrained.

“Miss.” Lu Luo thought for a while, in the end, she still came over, holding an already-brewed expensive type of oolong tea, and neatly placed it down.

Su Luo only gave a slight grunt and did not raise her head to look at her.

Lu Luo, seeing Su Luo’s quiet and peaceful expression, couldn’t help but to anxiously stamp her feet: “Miss, even at a time like this, how can you still remain so calm?”

“Oh?” Su Luo raised her head from 《The Continent’s History》, her eyes which were watching Lu Luo were like an ancient well without a single ripple, and the corner of her mouth had a smile.

Seeing Su Luo’s calm and collected expression which was lacking a single ripple, Lu Luo nearly became angry from being anxious: “Miss, why are you not concerned about His Highness Prince Jin? The rumors outside are going crazy.”

“What is being spread?” Su Luo, calm and unruffled, picked up the teacup and took a sip.

“Jade Lake’s fairy ah!” Lu Luo was not very accepting, as she snorted while panting in rage: “Outside, it has already been widely spread that the Jade Lake’s fairy will arrive in the Imperial Capital. Furthermore, it’s even spread that she is

the future Princess Jin!”

Su Luo smiled but didn't speak.

“Miss, how could the Jade Lake's fairy be Princess Jin? Clearly, you are the true Princess Jin!” Lu Luo expressed her strong feeling of being unconvinced.

Su Luo had her head lowered as she flipped through the book, the corner of her mouth smiling carelessly: “Oh? You seem to be clearer about this than me?”

Lu Luo ran up, with one grab snatching《The Continent's History》from Su Luo's hands, and seriously said to Su Luo: “Miss, you can't go on like this, otherwise, His Highness Prince Jin will be snatched away by the Jade Lake's fairy!”

Su Luo's smile was not quite a smile. If Nangong Liuyun was that easily snatched away by another person, then he was unworthy of having her, and unworthy of Su Luo being invested in him.

Su Luo took back that book of《The Continent's History》from Lu Luo's hands and unhurriedly flipped through it.

Lu Luo saw that happy and content appearance of Su Luo's, and she became so anxious that she kept pacing around Su Luo in circles, walking about.

Su Luo remained silent, then lifted up her head to look at Lu Luo: “With you walking around like this, it is making me dizzy, quickly stop walking.”

Lu Luo saw that Su Luo was paying attention to her, and she hurriedly rushed up and said to her: “Miss, how can you stand it? How can you sit here in a manner of staying out of it?”

“Then, you tell me, what should this Miss do?” Su Luo closed the book, raised her eyebrows and smiled.

“You should go beseech the Master ah, doesn't the Master also look favorably upon the matter of you and His Highness Prince Jin? No matter what, you shouldn't just stay foolishly like this, you have to take the initiative!” Lu Luo's eyes shone like the full moon, “Even if you act for His Highness Prince Jin to see ah. When His Highness Prince Jin sees how much you care about him, once happy, he will abandon whatever that Jade Lake's fairy does for sure ah, and will run over here to our place.”

Su Luo glanced at her with a smile.

Foolish Lu Luo ah, foolish Lu Luo, you still see human nature as too beautiful. Why would Su Zian help her?

“Do you still remember the matter on that day when this Miss returned from the Sunset Mountain Range. When Su Wan complained that I offended Jade Lake’s fairy?” Su Luo voluntarily tossed out a sentence.

Lu Luo’s voice started stammering: “Young, young Miss, you are saying, the Master would.....”

At that time, Master believed that Miss had offended the Jade Lake’s fairy, and was itching to choke Miss to death!

Su Luo, meeting Lu Luo’s gaze, seriously nodded her head and said: “You should bear in mind, in the future, don’t seek Su Zian for anything, he is unreliable.”

Lu Luo saw Su Luo directly calling him ‘Su Zian’, rather than ‘Dad’, and immediately, she was dumbfounded.

Momentarily, the atmosphere was somewhat strange.

Chapter 637 – Dispute in a love triangle (2)

“You should just stop worrying, go back into the room and stay there properly.” Su Luo pointed to inside the room.

“I wouldn’t be able to stay still inside, only, what should we do?” Lu Luo anxiously paced around inside the room. Suddenly, she clapped her hands, “That’s right, His Highness Prince Jin! As long as His Highness Prince Jin’s heart leans toward Miss, then he definitely won’t be snatched away!”

Su Luo cast a laughing glance at this impetuous servant girl, “As for Nangong Liuyun? These few days, he hasn’t dropped by.”

Lu Luo’s complexion suddenly turned pale: “His Highness Prince Jin, he, he....will not be like that! He treats the Miss really well, how could he change after seeing someone different? Even if all the men under the heavens would change after seeing someone different, His Highness Prince Jin wouldn’t.”

“Oh? How do you know?” Su Luo smiled lightly.

“Isn’t this clearly a matter of fact.” Lu Luo earnestly analysed it for Su Luo, “Before, this servant was worried so much that I became muddled. In fact, you see here, hehe, before, did his Highness Prince Jin ever like another young lady? Ever give them a good expression? Take the initiative to stick to them? Also, with that kind of soft and tender expression, a spoiling manner....he never did, right?”

Su Luo smilingly watched her.

Lu Luo continued to give Su Luo her analysis: “However, all of these, His Highness Prince Jin did it all with Miss. This clearly illustrates that Miss is the most special existence in His Highness Prince Jin’s heart! What does that Jade Lake’s fairy count as? Let her stay on the side!”

Su Luo watched this girl and couldn’t help but smile slightly, she put the book

aside and carelessly said; “They, however, are childhood sweethearts, who knows.... Oh, that’s right, I heard that the Jade Lake’s fairy will enter the city today, right?”

“Yeah!” Lu Luo solemnly nodded.

Within the capital, for many days, this day had been spread around like crazy. Everyone wanted to catch a glimpse of the Jade Lake’s fairy’s real appearance. Now, for sure, the entire city would have turned up. Lu Luo also wanted to see what the Miss’s love rival really looked like.

“Let’s go.” Su Luo tossed the book to Lu Luo and smoothed down the non-existent wrinkles on her skirt.

“Where to?” Lu Luo felt it was quite odd, when the Miss went out, she had never brought her along. Today was the first time that this had ever happened.

“Go join in the fun.” The corner of Su Luo’s mouth hooked into an enigmatic smile.

Not only did Lu Luo want to see the Jade Lake’s fairy, Su Luo also wanted to see her.

She wanted to see, Nangong Liuyun and the Jade Lake’s fairy’s meeting, ought to be what kind of spectacle? Really made a person look forward to it with expectations.

Today’s capital seemed more lively and bustling than the former days.

Inside the city, the streets were scrubbed three times, and every house was draped in red silk as a sign of honor. It was overflowing with lights and vibrant colors for the sake of only welcoming one person.

Now, it was already noon, the autumn sun shone brightly and was mildly warm.

Both sides of the streets were already full of people, mountains and oceans deep. Everyone stood on tiptoes to peer over the crowd, only trying to catch a glimpse of that elegant fairy.

That person was precisely Jade Lake Li family’s little princess— —The Jade Lake’s fairy.

The Capital's most bustling Fullmoon brothel, in a private room on the second floor.

Su Luo was dressed up as a male, wearing a white-colored robe, that danced elegantly in the wind. Delicate, pretty, neat and smart, with an extraordinary temperament.

Lu Luo was in a simple light blue robe dressed as a student, now, she was attending to her on the side, boiling water and pouring tea for Su Luo.

A faint sound could be heard coming from outside of the rolled-up curtain.

"I heard that the Jade Lake's fairy is goddess-like and devastatingly beautiful, she is the number one beauty in Eastern Ling empire. Simply unforgettable after one glance."

"Beautiful, that beauty is naturally one that will shake one to the core, the most important thing is temperament! That pureness and coldness is like a snow lotus in an iceberg, noble and unsullied temperament, ah! I heard even His Highness Prince Jin is mesmerized to the point of being head over heels in love."

"Is this really true? Even His Highness Prince Jin is captivated by her? That is what kind of beauty ah." Everyone simultaneously cried out in surprise.

"How could this little princess from the Jade Lake Palace be someone us ordinary folks can easily see? Today's opportunity is hard to come by. In the future, if you still want to get a glimpse of the Jade Lake's fairy, then it would certainly be difficult."

Chapter 638 – Dispute in a love triangle (3)

“That’s right, that’s right. If I can really see her once, then in this life, I will have no regret.”

“Eh, wasn’t it said that His Highness Prince Jin and that fourth Miss from Su Manor are together and very close? What, now he is linked to the little princess from the Jade Lake Palace?”

“The fourth Miss from Su Manor? Humph, are you talking about that good-for-nothing Su Luo? You really value her too high, how could His Highness Prince Jin fancy that kind of woman? Stop joking.”

“That certainly is not right. His Highness Prince Jin truly treats Su Luo, Miss Su, really well. I heard before that him destroying the Crown Princess’s businesses was also to help Su Luo to demand repayment of a debt from the Crown Prince....”

“Ha, that Su Luo first stole her older sister’s fiancée, afterwards, she forced her older sister to the degree of making her handicapped. Now, whether she is alive or dead is unknown, this kind of malicious woman, how could His Highness Prince take a fancy to? Are you guys regarding His Highness Prince Jin as a collector of trash?”

“Besides, I ask you, if you were to pick between the Jade Lake’s fairy or that Su Luo, who will you choose?”

“Naturally, I will choose the Jade Lake’s fairy! Does this even require thinking?”

“Then, how many hundreds of times smarter is His Highness Prince Jin compared to us? Could he choose wrongly? Therefore ah, we should not worry

about this for no reason. This Princess Jin is absolutely the Jade Lake's fairy, no escaping it!"

A group of people that originally had some hesitations in their hearts, after hearing the words of this person, they all nodded their heads in agreement, showing approval that what he said was reasonable.

Private room.

The private room was only separated by a curtain, the quality of soundproofing was extremely poor. As a result, this dialogue was clearly transmitted to the ears of the master and servant pair inside.

Lu Luo's complexion was flushed from anger, her hand that carried the teapot trembled slightly, the tea water flowing out.

Too insulting! What was known as 'His Highness Prince Jin was collecting trash'? Her family's Miss was the best and smartest Miss under the heavens! Obviously, His Highness Prince Jin, in order to get closer to her family's Miss, had personally delivered breakfast for her. How could you say that His Highness Prince Jin was collecting trash ah! It was simply absurd!

With a 'bang' sound, she directly slammed down the teapot heavily. Looking shrewish with both hands at her hips, she was just about to go out and argue with those people.

Su Luo slanted her a faint glance.

With just this glance, she was able to make Lu Luo stand still.

"Miss, you are just going to allow these people to talk rubbish?" Lu Luo was infuriated until her entire body was trembling.

Obviously, it was His Highness Prince Jin who incessantly chased after the Miss, why was it that when these people said it, it was completely the opposite? This was not fair!

Lu Luo indignantly glared at those gossipy people outside. She secretly thought in her heart, wait until a chance to encounter His Highness Prince Jin, she must tell His Highness what was said and let him hear it. Let him give the Miss some justice!

Now, all of a sudden, the sound of surprised yells came from outside: “ Quickly look, the Jade Lake’s fairy has arrived!”

Momentarily, everyone’s eyes gazed towards the street.

Their movements were uniformed and orderly, falling as one. It seemed as if they had practiced it countless times before.

The people sitting near the window were fortunate, those that were not close to the window, for a moment, all of them, without exception, rushed to the window.

“Hey, don’t squeeze in you guys, stand properly, stand properly.”

“Hey, hey hey, I am still eating the dish on the table. You guys don’t step on it!”

“Hey, don’t crawl up my back, ouch, hey, too heavy, I’m about to die!”

Outside was a huge area of noise.

All of it was because of one person, she was called: the Jade Lake’s fairy.

Su Luo weighted the teacup in her hand, her gaze carelessly looking there accordingly.

From the distant sky, came the sound of skillful heavenly music.

About ten women dressed in plain white gowns came along. Their hands carried wicker baskets and were constantly tossing out flower petals.

The flower petals fluttered about flowingly, making them appear extremely graceful and agile in mid-air.

Their facial features were pretty, although they were not matchless beauties. However, every one of them was quite pretty, beautiful and elegant.

To say nothing of the fact that every one of them knew martial arts.

Chapter 639 – Dispute in a love triangle (4)

Their speed was just right for being graceful. Their slender waists were so supple, making it seem as if they were boneless. They danced in the breeze like fairies walking on waves, in an otherworldly manner that was extraordinary and refined.

“Oh heavens, these women.....” With regards to their appearance, every one of them, if they were to walk out, would not be lacking when compared to a daughter from a rich family.

Moreover, in just this one appearance, there were ten of them.

“These are the Jade Lake’s fairy’s servant girls!” Someone made a fist full of certainty.

“Even the Jade Lake’s fairy’s servant girls are all this beautiful, one can well imagine how devastatingly beautiful she herself is! It is truly something to look forward to!”

For a moment, everyone’s tongues were wagging spiritedly, numerous flattering words were piled up on the Jade Lake’s fairy’s body, with regards to her, they had deep expectations.

Under the escort of the numerous women, the Jade Lake’s fairy’s imperial chariot arrived elegantly.

That was a flying imperial chariot being pulled by a brightly-colored phoenix, the surroundings of the imperial chariot were filled full with fresh flowers, with the petals flowing around, romantic and aesthetically pleasing.

Sitting in the imperial chariot was a woman dressed in white, pure and holy like snow. Her body was delicate and elegant, seemingly dancing in the wind carefreely, her facial features faintly discernible.

But that short glance, was already sufficient to make everyone's eyes vertical

— —
“So beautiful.....”

“Beauty that has vanished from the earthly world.....”

“Exceptional and matchless.....”

“In the heavens and on earth, so unique ah.....”

“This kind of woman, how could His Highness Prince Jin's heart not be moved?”

“That love-struck fool from the Su family. when compared to the Jade Lake's fairy, that is simply.....”

“Hey, is there something wrong with you ah, how could you bring up anyone to be compared to the Jade Lake's fairy? How could these inferior people even be compared together?”

The people in the crowd nearly started to quarrel again.

All eyes were opened wide, looking at that pure and holy Jade Lake's fairy, like a fairy descending to earth from the ninth layer of heaven. Everyone had become foolish from looking, as if having an out of body experience.

Not long after, the brightly-colored phoenix slowly stopped.

The Jade Lake's fairy slowly emerged from the imperial chariot.

They saw her exquisite and perfect facial features with which you couldn't find a single fault. Her ink-like eyes were slightly misty like liquid fog. Her red lips glistened with a sparkling and translucent luster, her skin smooth and fair with jade-like bones. She had exquisite curves.

More importantly, her temperament was like a serene orchid in an unoccupied valley, with a kind of serene, pure and cold beauty. Just gazing at her made a person feel inferior.

In the split second that she appeared, practically everyone that cared held their breath. Their dazed gazes foolishly stared at her.

They had a very surreal feeling.

Wasn't this exactly like a live fairy descending to the mundane world from the ninth layer of the heavens? She was simply perfect without a fault and so pure, as if even the sunlight was diminished because of her.

In front of the Jade Lake's fairy, stood a man.

He was dressed in a soft, black, silk robe with gold and silver threads drawing the outline of the claw of a dragon with scales which were fierce and imposing.

His fine, ink-like, black hair was carelessly tied up by red silk, the tassels of his jade belt lightly fluttered in the wind, also making him appear even more elegant.

At this moment, he jumped down from the Dragon Scaled horse, to stand in front of the Jade Lake's fairy. He had a gentle, lazy expression on his matchless handsome face. The corner of his mouth was hooked in a demonically charming smile.

"Third senior brother, did you come to welcome me?" Seeing the man that commanded her soul and leading it as if in a dream, even the often serene Jade Lake's fairy, was also unable to suppress her excitement.

"His Highness Prince Jin! That is His Highness Prince Jin!"

Now, everyone had recognized, the man that came down from the horse was the male lead of the rumors.

Perhaps some people might not recognize His Highness Prince Jin, but that respectable and insufferably arrogant Dragon Scaled horse was known to everyone.

At this moment, the male and female lead of the rumors stood face-to-face.

The male was incomparably handsome with an unrestrained shallow and gentle smile at the corner of his mouth.

The female was beautiful and elegant, with intoxicating, tender sentiments flashing through the depths of her eyes.

In a split second, everyone, without exception, became impassioned.

The gossiping trait in their body ignited into a flame, that then spread throughout their whole body, appearing prominently on their faces.

Chapter 640 – Dispute in a love triangle (5)

Each and every one of these coarse, manly men, were all so excited that their bodies were riled up.

“His Highness Prince Jin and the Jade Lake’s fairy are truly a match made in heaven ah.”

“Aren’t they, right? You guys look, a talented male and beautiful female, matchless under heaven, simply a pair of jade annulus ah.”

“That’s only natural, have you guys ever seen His Highness Prince Jin smile? But now, he is standing in front of the Jade Lake’s fairy with such a tender smile.”

“The Jade Lake’s fairy is also the same, how pure, cold and noble of a woman, in front of His Highness Prince Jin, she is like a yielding ball of water.”

“A perfect match ah, truly a perfect match!”

At this time, visitors of the Full Moon brothel all thought the same, to say nothing of those commoners outside on the road?

Now, in a private room on the second floor.

Lu Luo held her breath with rapt attention and seriously observed the complexion of her Miss.

She saw Su Luo’s expression was still indifferent as water, not a ripple from being startled. But she said with extreme anger: “Miss, don’t tell me you aren’t even angry? His Highness Prince Jin truly is.....truly is.....”

Toying with the feelings of her family’s Miss! But, these words, Lu Luo wasn’t able to say out loud.

In fact, Su Luo was not as calm as her expression implied.

She saw Nangong Liuyun with that familiar, tender light smile at the corner of his mouth. A dull ache swept through the position where her chest was located.

In the end, what was Nangong Liuyun, that bastard, doing? If he truly dared to have a foot in both camps, she would let him understand, what was called dying with an awful beat.

Su Luo's hands which were concealed in her sleeves, suddenly clenched into fists.

But speaking of that pair of jade annulus couple.

The Jade Lake's fairy truly hadn't expected, after experiencing those events from before, Nangong Liuyun would come to welcome her. Therefore, she almost couldn't suppress the excitement on her face.

"Third senior brother." Her soft tone, carried a touch of joy.

Momentarily, that beautiful complexion was like a blooming epiphyllum flower, so gorgeous that it was impossible to produce locally.

However, Nangong Liuyun's brows wrinkled somewhat.

"Now you have see this king?" The corner of his mouth hooked into a demonically charming smile, his tone had a thread of pondering thoughtfully.

The Jade Lake's fairy was somewhat puzzled, but in her moment of joy, she couldn't see the obvious clues. With a sweet tempered smile, she reached out towards Nangong Liuyun's hand.

"Wow——this action of theirs is so intimate, simply makes people have wild and fanciful thoughts linking them."

"What is there to have wild and fanciful thoughts about? The Jade Lake's fairy going to be the future Princess Jin, ok?"

"Eh, you guys look——His Highness Prince Jin is looking towards us here, he, he actually smiled at me."

"Fart, that smile was aimed at me!"

Several normally gentle-tempered women in the prime of their youth, because of arguing about who His Highness Prince Jin smiled at, started a huge fight.

But, everyone was quite baffled, obviously, the Jade Lake's fairy was standing in front of His Highness Prince Jin. Why would he even turn his head around to smile at them?

Only Su Luo knew, that smile at the corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth was raised towards her.

A thread of gloominess flashed through Su Luo's heart, her fists clenched firmly.

Since he knew she was sitting here, he shouldn't have done something like this that would attract misunderstandings..... Otherwise, she would certainly not be polite.

At this time, everyone was puzzled.

The Jade Lake's fairy was also like this.

"Third senior brother..." The Jade Lake's fairy reached out to hold His Highness Prince Jin's hand. Her voice was soft with a touch of tempting charm.

Only in front of Nangong Liuyun the Jade Lake's fairy, who was proud as a snow lotus, would lower herself to be submissive in order to please him.

Nangong Liuyun lowered his head, didn't know what he said in the Jade Lake Fairy's ear, to actually make her smile repeatedly.

But very quickly, a huge, unforeseen event appeared.

Didn't know what the Jade Lake's fairy had said, and Nangong Liuyun's complexion suddenly changed, he heavily pushed away her hand without the slightest of hesitation.

As the Jade Lake's fairy wasn't prepared, she was pushed away several steps.

Chapter 641 – Dispute in a love triangle (6)

Afterwards, she lifted her head and looked at Nangong Liuyun in disbelief. Her pair of beautiful eyes was misty and teary.

“Ss—”

Out of those present at the scene, besides the Jade Lake’s fairy, the rest were also in disbelief.

This-What exactly just happened here?

They were just fine. So, why did His Highness Prince Jin, push the Jade Lake’s fairy away?

The Jade Lake’s fairy’s weeping appearance seemed very pitiful and distressed people’s heart. It made people wish they could place all the beautiful things before her.

These were the heartfelt thoughts of the many men at the scene.

Yet, Nangong Liuyun arrogantly looked down from above, merely giving the Jade Lake’s fairy an indifferent glance, then turned around to leave.

“Third senior brother!” The Jade Lake’s fairy, choked with emotion, shouted to stop him.

Nangong Liuyun stopped in his tracks but did not turn around.

At this point, the Jade Lake’s fairy had already stopped caring about being embarrassed. She rushed forward and embraced him from behind, pressing her gentle and beautiful cheek against his back.

“Third senior brother, please don’t abandon YaoYao, okay?” She cried, choked with emotion and looking indescribably miserable and wronged.

Under thousands of eyes, the Jade Lake's fairy, who normally was as cold as a lotus, was willing to do something like this, it was really like an invitation for the other party to trample all over her pride.

The her right now had thrown all caution to the wind.

Nangong Liuyun's body was slightly startled.

"Li YaoYao," he gave a light sigh and reached out to pry her slender fingers away from where they were tightly wrapped around his abdomen.

Even though he was a cold and fickle person, however, for the sake of their friendship from growing up together, it was not something he said he could erase and it would be erased.

"No, I don't want to. Third senior brother, I beg you, please don't..." The Jade Lake's fairy cried beautifully like raindrops on a pear blossom until she was nearly unable to breathe.

That continuous sound of pleading, mournful weeping, made people hearing it shed tears.

"The Jade Lake's fairy really is too pitiful..."

"She has such a deeply-rooted love for His Highness Prince Jin, but it seems His Highness Prince Jin..."

"His Royal Highness has a very hard heart! Where can you find such a beautiful woman on this earth? Yet he actually doesn't want her? That's truly called being too fortunate to not know when he is blessed!"

"You know fart! Our Highness Prince Jin's foresight is great! This sort of young, unmarried maiden from a rich family who knows no shame, always looking at and inappropriately holding on to men – our Highness Prince Jin could not possibly afford to have her!"

"That's right. Clinging to a man in such a public place with such a large crowd... This sort of woman, which man can endure her?"

"In broad daylight and under so many watching eyes, she would do such a disgraceful and impolite thing. Is this Jade Lake's fairy really as pure as ice and spotless as the rumors say? Sure doesn't seem like it..."

For a moment, everyone immediately divided into several factions.

There was the faction that supported His Highness Prince Jin and strongly believed that no matter what His Highness Prince Jin did, he was absolutely right.

There were some that sympathized and pitied the Jade Lake's fairy, wishing they could reincarnate to be the embodiment of brave men. They wished to become her firm support and safe harbour.

As for the third faction that was more rational and intelligent. They had already begun to suspect whether there were other secrets behind the Jade Lake's fairy's pure as ice and spotless reputation.

At this time, the Jade Lake's fairy was still wrapped tightly around Nangong Liuyun's waist, refusing to let go.

"Third senior brother, don't go. Don't go..." Her tone was entreating, not leaving a trace of face saving for herself.

The corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth hooked into an unrestrained, indifferent sneer. His tall and slim figure was straight as a bamboo stalk. His gaze was able to cross over the layers of people and fix itself directly onto the people in the private room on the second floor.

At this time, Su Luo, who had sat down leisurely to watch the show, had her long, shapely eyebrows creased slightly.

With the way that Nangong Liuyun was staring at her... What was he doing?

At this moment, time seemed to freeze. The whole world had become quiet, and nobody said a word.

Seeing that Su Luo still was not heading towards him, a pained smile flashed across Nangong Liuyun's eyes.

In the end, she still would not come out.

Chapter 642 – Dispute in a love triangle (7)

At this moment, he felt that Li Yaoyao who was hugging him was somewhat pitiful, and that he, himself, was as pitiful as her.

Bitterly awaiting, foolishly wrapped around their finger, praying for a thread of tender feelings from the other side.

How they resembled each other, both were pitiful creatures in love.

While Nangong Liuyun was in the midst of his sad thoughts, suddenly, a figure in white arrived by stepping on air and determinedly stood in front of him.

Su Luo glared at Nangong Liuyun in displeasure, her features shrouded in cold frost. Her tone was ice-cold like millennium-old ice.

“Nangong Liuyun, you dare to let her hug you again, just try it!”

She arrived like a queen, in an imposing and vigorous manner.

The hands that Nangong Liuyun had clenched tightly by his side suddenly loosened. He appeared to have forgotten and tossed aside the Jade Lake’s fairy as if she were rags. That pair of always deep, boundless and beautiful eyes was brimming with happiness from having been emotionally moved.

“Luo Luo!”

Who would have known that Su Luo, with one move, would push him away: “The smell on your body really stinks to death, beat it.”

That was the smell of having been hugged by the Jade Lake’s fairy.

Nangong Liuyun didn’t even think, and in passing, tore apart that robe and got rid of it.

What made Su Luo bewildered was that his body was still clothed in the same color and same style of black-as-ink robe.

He actually wore two of the exact same robes together, tearing one off, and there was still another one?

This clearly illustrated that the bastard was basically already prepared for this earlier!

Now, everyone's gazes were staring fixedly at them, watching this dramatic change of scene in the play.

Who was the woman that appeared later?

She actually....ordered His Highness Prince Jin to get rid of the Jade Lake's fairy. And what amazed them was that His Highness Prince Jin really did do as she ordered!

Moreover, his action of shaking off the Jade Lake's fairy was so boorish, so ruthless, in a manner that was without a bit of tender protective feelings for the fairer sex.

"This is the fourth Miss from Su Manor!"

"Su Luo? Could it be she is that Su Luo?"

"Exactly that Su Luo, on the day of the life and death duel, I placed a bet on her, the one completely unknown, to win, hahahaha——"

Now, all the gazes were focused on Su Luo's body.

The Jade Lake's fairy that had tumbled to the ground now looked extremely bedraggled and wretched.

She had discarded her pride, abandoned her dignity, but what it was exchanged for was being ruthlessly trampled on by Nangong Liuyun!

Now, no one could hate Su Luo as much as her!

That pair of eyes dipped in poison, a fierce and pungent gaze, it was like a poisoned arrow shooting towards Su Luo, wishing she could immediately dismember Su Luo into ten thousand pieces.

A maid went over to help the Jade Lake's fairy up.

But the Jade Lake fairy's eyes, even now, were hazy with tears. So pitiful, like the delicate white lotus flower being windswept and battered by rain.

“Third senior brother, how can you treat me like this...how can you...”

It seemed as if she was overly broken-hearted, her despair at the peak. Her body swayed weakly, falling onto the maid’s shoulder.

That appearance of the Jade Lake’s fairy being so broken-hearted and in despair, suddenly stirred up and moved countless male hearts greatly.

That was not a stranger, she was the goddess in their hearts. Now, the goddess was bullied by someone until she was like this, one could well imagine the wrath in their hearts.

However, all of Nangong Liuyun’s thoughts were placed completely on Su Luo’s body. No matter how miserably the Jade Lake fairy cried, it still would not have the slightest effect on him.

However, when he saw countless number of wrathful gazes converging onto his treasured Luo Luo’s body, this made his complexion haze over in a flash.

Nangong Liuyun’s hand held onto Su Luo’s tightly, then turned around towards Li Yaoyao, raised his eyebrow and smiled demonically: “Miss Li, what are you talking about?”

Once these words were said, Li Yaoyao’s complexion momentarily became deathly white as the color of snow.

Miss Li...such an unfamiliar way of addressing her? Just as if, between them, they were as indifferent as strangers.

“Third senior brother...” The Jade Lake fairy’s body swayed, almost as if in the next moment, she would fall....

Nangong Liuyun frowned slightly, a faint expression of annoyance flashing across his face.

Chapter 643 – Dispute in a love triangle (8)

Nangong Liuyun coldly smiled: “Miss Li, this king is not familiar with you and never had a sister apprentice like you. In the future, when you address me, please pay some attention to how you call me.”

He...How could he be like this! Being treated like this by the man she loved the most, the Jade Lake’s fairy was in despair and also furious at the same time. Her entire body was trembling slightly.

Nangong Liuyun swayed his and Su Luo’s hands that were linked by their ten fingers back and forth. His gaze inspected their surroundings once, his ice-cold tone ringing out: “Everyone saw it clearly, this is the real future Princess Jin. If there are people that dare to admit this under false pretences, they will have to take responsibility for the consequences!”

Once these words were said, everyone was in an uproar. The Jade Lake’s fairy’s figure began to tremble even more violently.

Afterwards, Nangong Liuyun didn’t even glance at her, pulling along Su Luo, he immediately turned to leave.

Among the crowd, everyone was all holding their breath with rapt attention. They didn’t even dare to breathe.

If His Highness Prince Jin was really to flip out, all of them were not enough for him to kill in one move.

The originally noisy, vast crowd, at this moment, was as quiet as the night. The wind blowing with the sounds of leaves falling could be heard clearly.

The throng of people, very quickly separated out, revealing a wide strip of pavement.

Nangong Liuyun leaped up and mounted the horse. He was sitting on the

horse's back and leaned over to pull Su Luo up on the horse's back.

The proud and pampered Dragon Scaled horse scattered open all four hooves, stirring up a lot of dust from the ground, galloped quickly and left.

Only leaving behind the rear view that was clear, cold and noble.

“Whoosh——”

Only now did everyone exhale out that turbid air in their throats.

The male lead for this incident had already left, therefore, everyone's line of sight, as a matter of course, landed upon the Jade Lake's fairy's body.

The originally pure, cold and noble fairy, now, the fairy seemed battered and exhausted...this contrast was really too great ah.

Moreover, everyone was all curious, the Jade Lake's fairy's noble and icily arrogant temper, would really disregard everything to hug His Highness Prince Jin?

Everyone was doubtful and puzzled, Su Luo also could not resolve this puzzle after much thought.

Nangong Liuyun sat behind Su Luo's body, both hands encircled around her waist and holding the reins. His warm breath was being released by her ear.

He also deliberately leaned in close, pretending to be nonchalant while stealthily nipping at her earlobe.

Su Luo glanced back, exasperatedly casting him a glance.

“In broad daylight on the main street, can you be a little more well-behaved, okay?”

Nangong Liuyun felt rather regretful: “Let's find a place with no one around, then this king can be affectionate and intimate with you once again?”

“Why are your thoughts so dirty? And you are still His Highness Prince Jin ah.” Su Luo disdainfully said to him.

“His Highness Prince Jin is also a man. Being a male, his blood vessels will become vigorous and extend because of the woman he loves.”

Su Luo felt that if she continued with this topic, it would become dangerous,

and her beautiful gaze moved with a bright idea, then said: “Oh that’s right, before, what did you say to Li Yaoyao? Making it so that she didn’t even want her own self-respect, and appealed to you in public?”

In theory, using common sense, with the Jade Lake fairy’s respectability, no matter how infatuated she was with Nangong Liuyun, she still wouldn’t do something like this.

After all, in that kind of environment, the Jade Lake’s fairy didn’t just represent only herself. She also represented the Jade Lake Palace.

Nangong Liuyun’s water caltrop-shaped lips hooked up, expelling a warm breath by the side of Su Luo’s sensitive ear, “Are you very curious?”

His voice carried a trace of natural charm, making a person’s heart feel as if thousands of larvae were crawling pass, silky, numbing and tickling.

“Are you going to say it or not?” Su Luo reached out with her hands to stop him by holding onto his waist.

It was rare to see this little appearance of Su Luo pouting playfully, so Nangong Liuyun’s mood was extremely good. With a philanderer’s gaze, he looked at her cheeks that were bright and clean like jade, this time, he arrogantly and lovably said: “Want to know, then you must give this king a kiss.”

This old cheap trick again, still hadn’t changed to a new one.

Su Luo slanted her body to give his lips a kiss: “Alright now?”

“Barely adequate.” Nangong Liuyun complacently humped twice, “Actually this king only said one sentence to her.”

“What sentence?” Su Luo asked.

Chapter 644 – Dispute in a love triangle (9)

Nangong Liuyun gave a profoundly mysterious smile, leaned close to Su Luo's ears and said a sentence in a low voice.

Su Luo lightly swept Nangong Liuyun a glance, turning her body around as a quick-witted expression flashed through her beautiful eyes.

The corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth hooked up slightly, he embraced Su Luo's slender and delicate waist and gave a loud shout: "Faster—"

The Dragon Scaled Horse released all four hooves, raising up the dust with a speed that was nearly as fast as the wind as they returned.

By the time Su Luo returned to the Manor, it was already nightfall.

When she took a step into Su Manor, she felt that the atmosphere in the Manor was somewhat strange.

The servants who saw her, their expression was complex, there was respect as well as fear, one after another, they walked away and fled.

"Miss." After Su Luo was carried away by Nangong Liuyun, Lu Luo had already returned to the Manor.

Now, she was standing guard at the doorway, seeing that Su Luo had returned, she anxiously ran to her.

"What's wrong?" Su Luo frowned.

The atmosphere in the Manor was quite strange.

"Miss, a matter that is far from good!" Lu Luo's expression was somewhat anxious, "I heard that today's matter made the Master go into a huge rage..."

Before Lu Luo could finish speaking, an unsympathetic figure, without a sound, appeared by Su Luo's side.

“The fourth Miss, the Master asked to see you.” Zi Xi’s tone was eternally cold, completely lacking any temperature.

It was still that same study.

Last time, because of Su Qing’s matter, he loudly reprimanded her, then, what about this time?

A hidden light in Su Luo’s pitch-black as night pupils appeared faintly, the corner of her mouth hooking into a cold smile. Unhurriedly, she pushed open that thick door.

Su Zian sat behind the long desk in the round, wide and red sandalwood chair.

The window was not opened, the lighting inside the room was dark and gloomy. Su Zian’s complexion would suddenly be bright than dark, hard to see clearly.

Zi Xi noiselessly closed the door. In that moment, inside the study remained a father daughter pair with unfamiliar feelings.

Su Zian sat there, cold and detachedly.

Su Luo stood there with hands hanging down.

Neither of them spoke, the surroundings were awfully quiet.

Suddenly Su Zian’s gaze swept towards Su Luo, like a frosty light shooting towards her.

“Su Luo, today, you and His Highness Prince Jin’s conduct, do you know how big a blunder you have made?”

Su Zian’s tone was apathetic without a touch of heat.

On Su Luo’s face was a breezy, clean and spring-like smile: “Made a blunder? How can that be? Wait until this daughter becomes Princess Jin, daddy will also have great benefits, isn’t that so?”

“Absurd!” Su Zian, seeing Su Luo’s ‘I will continue to do as I please’ manner, immediately, the fury in his chest erupted. He pointed at Su Luo and bellowed: “You have the cheek to say these kind of words. Don’t you know any shame? How did your mother teach you?!”

The tip of Su Luo's lips rose slightly, evoking into a taunting sneer: "Mother certainly did not teach me anything, if father wanted to admonish a person, shouldn't mother be invited here too?"

The mother here naturally referred to Madam Su.

Su Zian's mouth full of wrath was choked back in his chest, couldn't go up nor down, stifling him until it was extremely painful to bear.

One could only see him slam his palm heavily on the table: "No matter what, you must not marry His Highness Prince Jin! You should avail yourself and let this heart have an early demise!"

Su Luo's long, shapely eyebrows knotted: "Why is father like this? Could it be that His Highness Prince Jin is not outstanding enough?"

"Precisely because he is too outstanding, therefore, you are unworthy of him! He is what kind of giant among men, only worthy to be matched with Li Yaoyao's kind of fairy-like woman."

Su Zian's gaze showed a deep frost, "Whereas you, Su Luo, look at yourself. What part of you can be compared even a little bit to the Jade Lake's fairy? You are inferior to even one of her fingers! Don't tell me you have no such self-knowledge?!"

So belittling of her?

Su Luo looked at him indifferently, gave a sneer and said: "Is this something a father would say to their daughter? People who don't know may be under the impression that Li Yaoyao is your real daughter instead."

Chapter 645 – Dispute in a love triangle (10)

“Su Luo! You are courting death!”

Su Zian flew into a rage out of humiliation, one hand about to slap towards Su Luo’s face.

He was the great general that protected this nation, normally, he was accustomed to strutting around. Who would dare to retort back to him? Now, this loathsome girl repeatedly put him on the spot in an awkward situation.

Su Luo waved her hand. The little divine dragon appeared on top of Su Luo’s shoulder and bit down on Su Zian’s hand.

Su Zian was frightened into jumping up, fast as lightning, his hand withdrew. Only this avoided a tragedy from taking place.

His heart still had some lingering fear as he glared at Su Luo, itching to swat her to death.

But Su Luo merely stood there indifferently, with expression as tranquil as water: “Honorable father, in the end, what did you want to do?”

Listening to his intent, it didn’t seem as if he wanted to completely have her and Nangong Liuyun break up.

Su Zian gave a cold snort, tossed his sleeves and turned his body around: “You are Su Zian’s daughter, how could I treat you unfairly?”

Su Luo smiled secretly in her heart.

Not treating her unfairly? This was too difficult to say.

One could only see Su Zian snort coldly: “It’s merely that Jade Lake Palace had always taken part in an alliance with Eastern Ling empire as a peaceful nation

that coexisted. If it was because of you, loathsome girl, that causes the alliance to collapse, you would be the person condemned by history! The beautiful woman that brought calamity to the nation!”

Person condemned by history? Beautiful woman that brought calamity to the nation? Such huge criminal charges, the corner of Su Luo’s mouth maintained her cold, indifferent smile.

Su Zian had his back to Su Luo, therefore, he didn’t see the mocking expression on her face. He still continued to pompously say: “This father has already apologized on your behalf to His Majesty. Fortunately, His Majesty was magnanimous and merciful. He didn’t overly blame you.”

That Emperor Jing being magnanimous and merciful? Maybe he was itching to send people to finish her off with one slice to resolve his hate, right? Su Luo coldly snorted in her heart.

Having spread out so many covers, Su Zian finally got to the main topic: “This father originally thought to separate you from His Highness Prince Jin, but His Majesty was kind. He decided to let you marry His Highness Prince Jin with the status of a concubine at the same time as he marries the Jade Lake fairy.”

“The status of a concubine?” Su Luo’s pair of ice-cold eyes, like waves, flickered. The corner of her mouth hooked into a smile that was not quite a smiling intent, “Was this the great idea that you guys came up with?”

“This is the best method!” Su Zian pointed at Su Luo, his appearance unprecedentedly solemn, “If you still have other ideas, don’t blame this father for being merciless and cruel!”

“What? Is father afraid that Jade Lake Palace, because of Li Yaoyao’s matter, would take out their anger on Su Manor? As a result, the cowardly you would rather use both hands to deliver His Highness Prince Jin, this son-in-law, to the Jade Lake Palace?” The smile on Su Luo’s face became increasingly more brilliant. However, her pitch-black eyes had an indescribable frost and lack of regard.

Having Su Luo speak directly to the heart of the matter, Su Zian’s old, brazen face suddenly became frost. He simply stopped trying to cover it up and directly gave a sneering sound, “Do you really believe that His Highness Prince Jin would choose you and not the Jade Lake’s fairy? He merely had a falling out with the

Jade Lake's fairy, wait until they reconcile, where would there be a place for you to stand? Able to marry His Highness Prince Jin as a concubine, is already your biggest fortune! Su Luo, you should be content with this situation!"

Su Zian's words undoubtedly were sharp and unkind, moreover, it did not show mercy or spare her embarrassment.

If the Su Luo now was still the same Su Luo from before. If Su Luo didn't know that Su Zian was not her actual biological father, perhaps, she would have been sad and depressed.

But, it just so happened that the her right now was already not that timid and weak Su Luo from before!

Su Luo lifted up her head and coldly watched Su Zian, her pitch-black pupils could nearly illuminate Su Zian's face: "Since it's like this, then you just wait and see. When the time comes, see who is the person who will be married to Nangong Liuyun!"

Li Yaoyao, in pursuit of wanting to be married to Nangong Liuyun, what other methods wouldn't you use? Su Luo coldly smiled in her heart.

Chapter 646 – Dispute in a love triangle (11)

After she finished speaking, Su Luo turned around and immediately walked away.

Su Zian roared in anger at her rear view: “Su Luo, if you dare to marry yourself to His Highness Prince Jin without permission, you should know the consequences yourself!”

Su Luo glanced back, smiling brilliantly: “Didn’t the Great General Su say that I, Su Luo, cannot be compared to even one of the Jade Lake’s fairy’s finger? Didn’t you say that wait until His Highness Prince Jin had reconciled with the Jade Lake’s fairy, then there wouldn’t be a place for me? Since you have so much confidence in the Jade Lake’s fairy, then what are you worried about?”

This remark once said immediately made Su Zian stop and stare blankly.

Like the contradiction between a spear and a shield (1), see how Su Zian would break this puzzle.

Seeing Su Zian’s complexion turn ashen from fury, the corner of Su Luo’s mouth hooked into an indifferent sneer, and soon after, she left the study.

Compared to the oppressive atmosphere inside the study, the air outside could be said to be much fresher and cleaner.

Wisteria courtyard.

“Miss, drink a mouthful of water to cool your temper.” Lu Luo, seeing that Su Luo’s complexion was not good, hurriedly stepped forward to attend to her.

Su Luo held the teacup and, little by little, her mouth curved into a smile: “It’s fine, your family’s Miss is not angry.”

“But Miss, you just came out from Master’s study in a rage.”

“If I did not act that way, how would the Jade Lake’s Li family let down their guard?” a cold light flashed through Su Luo’s eyes.

How could the little divine dragon’s perception be the same as ordinary people’s, as a result, she knew that an expert from the Jade Lake’s Li family was hidden in the corner of the study .

The more arrogant and despotic she acted, only then would the Jade Lake’s Li family relax their vigilance.

Lu Luo suddenly realised.

Su Luo weighed the teacup in her hand, her eyes sparkling with complex rays of light.

Because Nangong Liuyun provoked Li Yaoyao, and on top of that, the Jade Lake’s Li family that was behind Li Yaoyao. Now, Su Luo’s situation was truly somewhat bleak.

However, how could Li Yaoyao agree to become his concubine? Perhaps, she wanted to bring Su Luo over and justifiably torment her?

The corner of Su Luo’s mouth hooked into an apathetic sneer.

As to being a concubine? She, Su Luo, would never share a male in this lifetime with another woman.

The days passed peacefully.

For a few days, it was all calm and quiet, also, no one seemed to mention that so-called matter of becoming a concubine again.

However, Su Luo had a premonition of an imminent storm coming, her heart was faintly uneasy.

On this day, Su Luo was just sitting cross-legged, cultivating.

Suddenly, from the doorway, came the sound of hurried footsteps.

Lu Luo trotted in with her head full of perspiration, and anxiously pulled Su Luo to a stop: “Miss, a huge bad event occurred!”

“Don’t be so flustered, if you have something to say, say it slowly. It’s not like the sky is falling.” Su Luo picked up a cup of water and handed it to her.

Lu Luo swallowed the entire cup of water in one gulp, and she wiped her mouth with the back of her hand: “Miss, something happened to the Young Master, your older brother!”

Just at this moment, a loud bang sound came from the door to the Wisteria courtyard.

Su Luo’s long, shapely eyebrows knitted slightly as she brought Lu Luo along to walk out.

She could hear numerous disorderly footstep sounds nearing from afar. Along with the sounds of those footsteps, Su Luo was very clear about who was leading them.

She had just arrived in the main hall and saw Su Xi bring a crowd of people, rushing in grandiosely.

Today, Su Xi was dressed in a scarlet gown, her entire person looking like a flaming fireball, overbearingly aggressive.

When Su Xi saw Su Luo, a strong hatred flashed across her furious face.

Her finger pointed to Su Luo: “People come, surround Su Luo!”

For a moment, several experts swarmed around, trying to move against Su Luo.

However, before their body even got close to Su Luo, one could see two shadowy figures fly out from the side. They immediately hit these people in the chest.

“Peng Peng Peng—” A series of fierce hitting sounds echoed.

After the sounds had finished echoing, one could see the experts that had followed Su Xi’s order to capture Su Luo lying on the ground.

1) Contradiction between a spear and a shield – this is about the story of how the Chinese word for contradictory comes from the Chinese character for spear and shield. The story goes that a long time ago, a person was selling a spear and a shield in a market. He would hold up the spear and say: “This spear is so strong it would pierce any shield.” Then he would hold up the shield in his other

hand and say: "This shield is so strong as to break off any spear." After hearing this, a person walked up to this seller and asked: "If the spear is so strong as to pierce your shield, while the shield is so strong as to break the spear. In the end, which is stronger?" The seller was unable to answer this question because of the inherent contradiction in his words. Thus came about the Chinese vocabulary for contradiction: composed of the Chinese characters for spear and shield. (This story was in my Chinese language studies book for 1st grade in China...I had forgotten the exact question that someone asked of the seller.)

Chapter 647 – Dispute in a love triangle (12)

Every one of them was throwing up blood, with incomplete bodies, so dead as to be unable to die again.

What ruthless and bloody methods!

Whereas those people dressed in black that rushed out from the side, had already disappeared without a trace. It was as if they had never appeared.

Su Xi's entire person became rigid on the spot as she foolishly stared blankly at Su Luo, with her lips trembling slightly.

Because the feeling the people dressed in black gave her was too shocking, too brutal.

“Su, Su, Su Luo! What kind of sinister plot are you scheming?” Su Xi did her best to restrain her shivering heart, biting down on her teeth and stiffly cursed in a rage.

Su Luo glanced at her indifferently, “You should acknowledge your mistake, those are people not ghosts.”

“Who are they? You actually dared to secretly hide men in the Manor——” Before Su Xi had finished speaking, one black shadow attacked towards her face.

“Fifth Miss, look out!” Quite a few servants moved in front of Su Xi to block the attack.

No matter how fast their speed was, how could they be faster than the little divine dragon who was known for his speed?

One could see his little body suddenly move right, then left, and all of a sudden, he broke through the defense of these people. He charged in, heavily slapping Su Xi's mouth.

The little divine dragon's claws were not ordinary, how sharp were they?

Su Xi, as a mere minor third rank, how could she dodge it?

At the time when a scary, spraying bloody mist appeared, the little divine dragon had already flown back into Su Luo's sleeves, as if he had never appeared.

Su Luo, in a spoiling manner, rubbed under his chin as the little divine dragon happily rolled around in her sleeves.

One person and one spirit pet were extremely happy from playing around, but had made Su Xi suffer bitter hardship.

It was quite a while before Su Xi was aware that her face had been wounded. She touched it, and discovered to her surprise that her hand was bloody!

The wounds on the face were unlike other places, if scars were left behind, then that would disfigure one's appearance!

Only now did Su Xi feel fear, with a trembling voice and her black pupils staring fixedly at Su Luo: "You, you, you..."

She said 'you' for quite a while, but could not continue and say a complete sentence.

Also, it was no wonder that she was so shocked, as if she had seen a ghost.

She had a rough idea of how strong Su Luo was through her duel with Su Qing from last time.

Therefore, this time, she had already brought enough people to arrest Su Luo!

But who would have known, that Su Luo would have so many helpers, like chinese chives after cropping off some, there were still more.

Su Luo coldly watched her: "What's wrong with you?"

"You——" Su Xi looked at Su Luo's appearance that was like a delicate summer flower, and recalled her own face that was full of blood. Momentarily, she was scared as well as furious. She hatefully cursed, "Su Luo! You bitch! Wicked witch! Why were you born into my family! Why don't you go and die!"

The more Su Xi cursed, the more energetic she became. She was itching to

rush up and scuffle with Su Luo.

But she was worried about the men dressed in black, therefore, her body remained unmoving, and she could only move her lips.

Su Luo smiled coldly: “Finished cursing?”

Su Xi glared furiously at Su Luo.

More and more, she really couldn't see through to what Su Luo was really thinking.

The her right now had seemed to change into a completely different person from before, just as if her soul had switched.

Su Luo glanced at her indifferently, her deep eyes containing a mixture of cynicism and mockery: “Since you have finished cursing, then now, can you finally tell me what really happened?”

“Older Brother was injured! He is nearly dead! Su Luo, it's all your fault he was harmed, all your fault! If it was not for you, Older Brother would have not ended up like this now!” If it was not mentioned, then fine, but once this matter was mentioned, Su Xi would bawl.

“Su Jingyu? He was injured? I didn't do it.” Su Luo's delicate and pretty face didn't have a trace of expression.

Chapter 648 – Dispute in a love triangle (13)

“Yes, you didn’t personally do it! But if it was not because of you, if you were not trying to snatch His Highness Prince Jin away from the Jade Lake’s fairy, Older Brother would not have ended up in his current situation!”

Not waiting for Su Luo to ask, Su Xi continued to talk non-stop: “On the road back from school, Older Brother was ambushed. Those people beat Older Brother until he was black and blue, and even left behind some words.”

Su Xi gnashed her teeth as she glared at Su Luo: “Su Luo, you know what they said? They said, such lowly person, don’t even think about getting a treasure they cannot obtain. Otherwise, this is only the beginning!”

Su Xi was cursing and crying at the same time: “Aren’t their words obvious enough? Su Luo, it’s all you! It’s all because you seduced His Highness Prince Jin and provoked the Jade Lake’s fairy’s anger, thus resulting in such a disaster! You are delivering our entire Su Manor into hell, Su Luo, you are simply too terrible!”

Faced with Su Xi’s condemnation, Su Luo was indifferent.

Admittedly, the Jade Lake’s Li family wasn’t good, don’t tell me the Su family was any better? Having lived in Su Manor for many years, Su Luo had personally experienced this.

Could get the Jade Lake’s Li family to help deal with the Su family, Su Luo’s heart didn’t have enough time to even be happy, so why would she feel guilty?

But, on her face, she should at least assume some worry.

A deep line of worry flashed through Su Luo’s forehead: “Then, what about Older Brother, is he gravely injured?”

“Of course it’s grave! He almost died! The imperial physician said he had no

way to treat him. If you want to save Older Brother, you have to be able to invite an Elite Apothecary!”

The more Su Xi spoke, the angrier she became. The angrier she got, the more she glared at Su Luo.

How could the Su Manor be able to invite over an Elite Apothecary?

Su Luo was very clear about the levels for an Apothecary.

From the bottom to top it was divided as Elementary Apothecary, Intermediate Apothecary, Advance Apothecary, Elite Apothecary, Master Apothecary, Grandmaster Apothecary, until finally reaching the immortal status of Divine Apothecary level.

But, on this continent, Apothecaries were extremely rare. Normally, even an elementary or intermediate Apothecary’s haughtiness had already soared to the skies. There were basically no Advanced Apothecaries, let alone the existence of an Elite Apothecary?

However, Su Luo had a person she could choose in mind.

That person just so happened to be an Elite Apothecary, however, wanting to invite him over was not an easy task with regards to Su Manor.

Su Xi didn’t know that at this moment, Su Luo had thought of so much, and she merely glared at Su Luo: “Quickly, you go tell His Highness Prince Jin, that you will not be with him, quickly go!”

Even though she had eaten a lot of losses in front of Su Luo, Su Xi was still that arrogant, bossy and despotic, the fifth Miss Su.

Su Luo smiled indifferently: “If you want to go, then go. People come, see the visitor out!”

“Su Luo, you, this slut——” Before she could finish her sentence, a black shadow flashed by, and another sharp claw that was faster than lightning scratched towards Su Xi’s face.

“Ahh——” A bitter yell burst out from Su Xi’s mouth, and blood started to fill the air, tumbling down drop by drop, seemingly extremely horrifying.

Su Luo held the little divine dragon who had returned to take credit. She held

him with one hand and used the other to reward him by stroking his head.

Su Xi had eaten such a loss, how could she be willing to give up? She was just about to order people to rush up.

However the people dressed in black that originally disappeared without a trace, once again appeared noiselessly. Each and every one of them carried a murderous aura with a ghostly appearance, their expressionless faces staring fixedly at Su Xi.

How ruthless were their methods, Su Xi had seen it with her own eyes. Therefore, her feet that were moving forward, were suddenly unable to move. For a moment, she didn't know what she ought to do.

“Get lost.” Su Luo smiled lightly, casting a side glance at Su Xi whose entire face was full of indignation.

Matters in the world were fickle. It had changed really fast.

Chapter 649 – Dispute in a love triangle (14)

Half a year ago, this fifth Miss Su was still strutting around in front of Su Luo and showing off. If she really had wanted to poison her, even Su Luo might not have been able to avoid it back then.

But now, she already could not do nothing to Su Luo. Not only this, now, she couldn't even get close to Su Luo.

In the end, Su Xi could only hatefully glare at Su Luo, leaving behind some fierce words: "Su Luo, just you wait, you will not have a good ending!"

Following Su Xi's exit, that group of people also left grandiosely. The tranquility was again restored to Wisteria courtyard.

"Miss——" Lu Luo looked at her family's Miss with concern.

"This is merely the beginning." Su Luo's bleak, ancient well-like pair of eyes had a threatening cold air, her lips were slightly bent at the corners.

Lu Luo followed behind Su Luo, frowning while saying in criticism: "Miss, say, why is the Jade Lake's fairy so shameless like this? Even though His Highness Prince Jin does not want her, she still uses various kinds of methods to coerce Miss. Where is there any of that rumored kind-hearted and gentle person who is a pure, ice beauty?"

Su Luo smiled hiding the thread of chilliness in the depths of her eyes.

Li Yaoyao never had that kind of kind-hearted, gentle temper. It was even more difficult, knowing where to start discussing how ice-like and pure she was.

Through the opened window, Su Luo looked at the pink, delicate lotus outside while holding the little divine dragon.

On that day in Sunset Mountain Range, just because Nangong Liuyun got close

to her, without the slightest hesitation, she immediately sent assassins to eliminate her, Su Luo.

If you really want to discuss this, to describe her as narrow-minded, uses vicious means, takes arrogant and willful rash actions, would not be too excessive in describing her.

“Miss.....” Lu Luo somewhat worriedly looked at Su Luo’s back.

After all, behind the Jade Lake’s fairy back, stood the entire Jade Lake’s Li family. This kind of powerful background, was not one the Miss was capable of contending against by herself.

Moreover, on the Miss’s side, the master would definitely not support the Miss. Not only would he not support her, on the contrary, very likely, he would deliberately make things difficult.....Sigh, why was Miss’s life so bitter and full of hardship like this.

Lu Luo wanted to say something, but hesitantly gazed at her family’s Mistress. She was very anxious for Su Luo in her heart.

“As for the Jade Lake’s Li family’s...” Su Luo mumbled to herself.

If behind her also existed a powerful background, this matter would be simple. But unfortunately, in connection with her lot in life, she was not at all able to touch it nor understand clearly.

Nangong Liuyun’s schemes were so meticulous, as long as she acted in concert to him, then it would be fine.

Before, Lu Luo had praised the Jade Lake’s fairy to the heavens, but after this had happened, wasn’t she also able to see clearly? It seemed that on this earth, there were still more people who were smart.

Hehe, Li Yaoyao, I really wish that you would move against me even more, so that this young lady can personally rip away that beautiful facade of yours! To let the people in the entire world see clearly through your beautiful outward appearance to your snake and scorpion-like heart.

“Miss, The young Master’s injury.....” Lu Luo looked uneasy, wearing a worried expression.

If young Master was really to die because of the Miss. Then in the future, it certainly would be difficult for the Miss in the manor.

Su Luo and Lu Luo's focus on this point was different.

Su Luo needed Su Jingyu alive, because only with him alive, would he be able to give evidence against the Jade Lake's fairy.

Therefore, it was a matter of vital importance to cure Su Jingyu. By all means, she must not let him just die like this.

Su Luo made a sound with her fingers, and immediately, a black-clothed person noiselessly appeared behind her.

"Go check on the address of a person." Su Luo then softly said two words, "Apothecary Leng."

The black-clothed person accepted the order and very quickly disappeared in mid-air.

Su Luo carried the little divine dragon, her mouth hooking into a smiling expression.

Nangong Liuyun actually had some foresight, after leaving the imperial palace that day, he dispatched black-clothed people to protect her in secret and publicly.

These several days, they had already buried several batches of assassins who came to kill her.

Su Luo innocently touched her nose, her personal conduct was not that bad. Why was it that there were so many people that wanted to kill her?

Chapter 650 – Crafty plots and machinations

(1)

Very quickly, the person dressed in black returned with news of Apothecary Leng.

Leng Yan, Apothecary Leng. One of the few Elite Apothecaries in Eastern Ling, just so happened to have met Su Luo through fate.

It was a pitch-black night, so dark as to not be able to see your fingers in front of you.

Su Luo's figure was like a leopard cat as she jumped out from the window and disappeared into the vast darkness of the night.

Now, within the capital, it was quiet and noiseless. The night wind blew up the corner of her jacket and made it rustle.

Su Luo's footsteps did not stop, on the roofs of the irregularly but charmingly arranged homes, she danced and jumped as she skimmed past.

Very quickly, she arrived at tonight's destination.

This was a courtyard in the center and the most bustling part of the capital.

Apothecary Leng had been busy all night in the refining pharmacy. He had just come out of the refining pharmacy and directly walked into his bedroom.

Pushing the door open as he entered, he then closed the door to inspect his surroundings. Suddenly, he raised his head to see a slight silhouette on the round chair made of red sandalwood.

Apothecary Leng's heart was startled!

There was actually someone that didn't inform him before directly entering his

residence? Such great courage!

“Who? I order you to stand out!” Apothecary Leng’s voice held fury, with brows tightly wrinkled.

Su Luo turned around, her eyes meeting with the startled ones of Apothecary Leng.

“Apothecary Leng, long time no see. You seem a lot younger.” Su Luo cupped her hands in greeting, smiling happily as she looked at Apothecary Leng.

When Apothecary Leng saw Su Luo, his expression was full of surprise. “Miss Su? Why is it you?”

If it was another person that dared to trespass into Apothecary Leng’s room, they would already have been dragged out and beaten to death with a stick, but Su Luo actually had this privilege.

Su Luo was all smiles as she looked at him, the corner of her lips hooking up slightly: “How is it unlikely to be me? Is it because Apothecary Leng had done something shameful, and doesn’t dare to see me?”

Apothecary Leng, having heard what was said, immediately scowled and glared at her: “Loathsome girl, what nonsense are you saying? How could this Apothecary do something shameful?”

There wasn’t enough time for me to even curry favor with you, loathsome girl, how could I dare to bully you. Apothecary Leng said secretly in his heart.

Unexpectedly, Su Luo coldly snorted a few times: “That’s right, Apothecary Leng didn’t openly bully me, but you let others bully me!”

Apothecary Leng felt that he was more wronged than Dou E (1), this matter must be explained clearly.

“Impossible!” Apothecary Leng felt that he was faced with supreme injustice, “If I heard of who dares to bully you, this old man would have broken his legs already. How could I have helped him to bully you?”

“But the results have already come out. How could Apothecary Leng still deny it here? Really makes a person feel deeply hurt.” Su Luo looked towards the few distant stars and moon in the sky, then shook her head and feigned a sigh.

He dragged over a circular bench and sat down firmly in front of Su Luo: “Girl, come, come, tell me everything so I can understand thoroughly. When did this old man bully you? If you don’t explain everything clearly, then don’t expect to leave.”

These words from Su Luo, had attracted Apothecary Leng’s curiosity. He must wash off this stain until he was clean again. Now, even if Su Luo had wanted to leave, Apothecary Leng would not have let her leave.

Su Luo coldly snorted: “Apothecary Leng, you must have successfully refined the Rebirth of Flesh pill, right?”

Mentioning this, Apothecary Leng immediately became as excited as a child. His eyes beamed with light: “That’s right, refined a few pills, and also finished testing it. The results were excellent, hahaha. The recipe you gave me is indeed a treasure ah.”

Su Luo once again coldly snorted: “Then, who did you, Apothecary Leng, find to test it on?”

Apothecary Leng thought for quite a while and still couldn’t understand. He scratched his head and gloomily said: “That pair of siblings was from what family? This, I actually forgot? In any case, these people were not someone I found, it must have been the steward who went to the streets and randomly pulled a few people back, right? Why? There is a problem?”

“Why? There is no why, merely a few days ago this Miss encountered a pair of siblings whose hands were chopped by me that somehow mysteriously had their hands grown back. This Miss saw it and fell into a bad mood.” Su Luo feigned anger, and sent a glare at Apothecary Leng.

1) Dou E : This is the main tragic female character of a play written during the Yuan dynasty... Basically, she was targeted by men who wanted to marry her and ended up framing her for murder. After her death, she was proven innocent. [See wiki page here.](#)

Chapter 651 – Crafty plots and machinations

(2)

Apothecary Leng's old face immediately turned red, his face betraying an embarrassed expression.

This piece of Primeval Pill recipe was originally bestowed as a gift from Su girl to him. Now that he had refined the Rebirth of Flesh pill, he had used it to cure her enemy. Wasn't this a slap to Su Luo's face? As for mentioning this matter, it really was him not being conscientious.

Apothecary Leng gave a dry cough: "Cough, cough, you, this girl's, luck is pretty bad ah, moreover, your enemies seem to be widespread. The steward randomly brought two people over and they turned out to be your enemy."

"That's right, they already said, Apothecary Leng and the Liu family's relationship is very close. You are the behind-the-scenes supporter of the Liu family, and they also mentioned you. They said if I dare to bully them, they will go complain to you. Hey, I'm really scared." Su Luo's tone was very lazy.

"Nonsense!" Apothecary Leng suddenly stood up, full of indignation and rage, "They were merely random people that my steward found, who knew who they were. They dared to use this old man's good reputation to brag everywhere, simply hateful! This old man will immediately go cut off their arms!"

Su Luo gave him a shallow glance: "There really is no close relationship?"

"This old man doesn't even know the direction to the Liu residence, how could there be any close relationship? Simply absurd!" Apothecary Leng slapped the table in extreme anger, "They still dared to use this old man's name to bully you, they are tired of living!"

Su Luo rubbed her chin, giving a contemplating appearance.

Apothecary Leng was really interested in Su Luo's Primeval Pill recipes, his only thoughts were to curry favor with Su Luo, coax her to be happy.

Thinking about this matter, his heart felt extreme guilt towards Su Luo. He turned around and said: "How about this old man send people to chop off their hands?" There was only this way to remedy the situation.

Su Luo dry coughed twice, if it was to go and chop off their hand...this really was something that a person with Apothecary Leng's temperament would do.

But, since destiny determined that those two siblings' hands would be restored, then it was really no good to go again and chop them off.

Of course, if they were still unable to discern good from bad, Su Luo could chop off their hands at any time.

For the time being, let them take care of those hands, let them continue growing on their bodies.

"No need to cut off their hands, only, this matter made this Miss eat a little loss..." Su Luo leaned back into the chair and unhurriedly said.

The recliner rocked back and forth, giving off squeaking noises, but Su Luo merely closed her eyes in enjoyment.

The Su Luo here was more relaxed and natural than at home.

Apothecary Leng was able to understand with just this little hint: "If there is something, Miss should just say it. If it is something this old man can do, this man will naturally do it at all costs."

Apothecary Leng would only grant Su Luo whatever she wished, with regards to others, he naturally was arrogantly aloof, with nose high up towards the sky.

The corner of Su Luo's mouth was raised in a light, careless smile. She muttered to herself for quite a while before unhurriedly saying, "I heard that Su Manor had just sent people to invite Apothecary Leng to treat the young Master in Su Manor.

"Su Manor? Which Su Manor?" Apothecary Leng's face was full of bewilderment.

Apothecary Leng had spent his entire life immersed in refining drugs, with

regards to the mortal worldly matters, he didn't understand. He also wasn't interested in understanding it. So, what Liu Manor, Su Manor, without exception, he did not know. Now, even if you were to ask him what direction the imperial palace's gate was, presumably, he also wouldn't know.

Su Luo pointed to herself: "This Miss's surname is Su."

Only now did Apothecary Leng suddenly become enlightened, "So it turned out to be your manor? This is not a problem, we will go right now. Other people will not do, but Su girl's face, this old man will nevertheless give it. You should feel assured, if your older brother is not dead, then this old man will think of a way..."

This was the first time Apothecary Leng was so enthusiastic about a disease.

Because he was very clear, Su Luo would not owe people favors.

Chapter 652 – Crafty plots and machinations

(3)

As long as he could cure the person in her family, then the rewards would definitely be rich.

Unexpectedly, Su Luo crossed her hands behind her back and unhurriedly shook her head.

“He is beyond cure?” Apothecary Leng asked.

Su Luo pulled Apothecary Leng to sit down, and said a few sentences into his ear.

Apothecary Leng speechlessly looked at Su Luo: “What? So it is not to invite me to save a person ah.”

Su Luo smiled happily as she looked at Apothecary Leng: “Then, will Apothecary Leng still want to go?”

“Go, why not go.” Apothecary Leng slanted Su Luo a glance: “You, this girl, has a brain full of twist and turns, lots of sly ideas.”

“Apothecary Leng merely needs to follow according to the plan, maybe, after this matter has succeeded, there could be a nice surprise waiting for you.”

Su Luo mischievously winked her eyes at Apothecary Leng. Her plain robe danced in the wind, and her figure had already disappeared into the night.

Apothecary Leng, having heard what was said, was slightly stumped for words.

Su Luo, this girl’s, thoughts were penetrating. She knew what he liked the most, perhaps the nice surprise she said was....Apothecary Leng, having heard what was said, suddenly felt bursts of ecstasy. With one grab, he pulled open the

door and directly shouted out: "Prepare the carriage!"

The steward heard sounds of movement and hurriedly ran over.

This steward was exactly the one that, at the time, because of neglecting Su Luo, he was very fiercely kicked a few times.

"Master, it's so late, where do you want to go?" The steward's face was full of doubt and puzzlement.

According to his own knowledge of his master, the master's only interest was in refining pills. For this, he could stay at home for a year and not go out.

Apothecary Leng recalled Su Luo's words, and immediately, his face darkened: "Today, did Su Manor send people over to seek treatment?"

Su Manor? Master actually knew about Su Manor, this thing? This was really unprecedented and the first time ever.

The steward's expression paused slightly, and he hastily took out a business card and handed it over to Apothecary Leng.

"Su Manor indeed sent people over, but at that time, you were in the refining pharmacy. This servant was afraid of disturbing you, so had kept it all along and hadn't had a chance to hand it over for you to look." The steward's forehead started to perspire.

Normally, there were many people who would hand over their business cards, beseeching the master to go to their residence to treat an illness. But usually, the master would not pay it any heed. Today, why...fortunately, he hadn't had time to toss out this business card.

Apothecary Leng took the business card and swept a glance at it, with an indifferent expression, he said: "Prepare a horse, go to Su Manor."

This late at night, his family's master had changed his lazy temperament, and actually wanted to go out and treat a patient? Didn't Master usually look down upon these so-called famous families in the imperial city?

This was really strange and bewildering.

The steward couldn't understand and also could not prevent it, he could only quickly run out to suitably prepare the horse carriage.

Ever since he was kicked by Apothecary Leng from last time, afterwards, this steward had mended his ways.

Su Manor.

Su Jingyu reclined on the bed with a pale complexion.

After being carried home by people, his eyes had never opened, having sank into a deep coma.

At this moment, Madam Su's face was red and swollen as she sat at his bedside. The moist and warm cloth unceasingly wiped clean the cold sweat on Su Jingyu's face.

"Lord, why is it that Apothecary Leng still isn't here yet? Jingyu, at this moment, seems..." Madam Su's tears rolled out and dropped to the ground, she seemed extremely broken-hearted.

Su Zian's face had a helpless expression: "Madam, it's not like you don't know about Apothecary Leng's temperament. He has always gone about his way, not someone we could easily invite over."

In the afternoon, he personally went to invite him, with his identity as the general that protected this nation. He was blocked from entering by people, let alone getting any results from sending servants to go? Therefore, Su Zian no longer held any hope.

"Lord, your meaning is, Apothecary Leng won't be coming?!" Madam Su, having heard what was said, opened her eyes wide until they were perfectly round. With one reach, she grabbed Su Zian's sleeves.

Chapter 653 – Crafty plots and machinations

(4)

She had placed all her hopes on Apothecary Leng's body, now, Su Zian was saying that Apothecary Leng wouldn't be coming?

Su Zian's complexion was hazy and he impatiently tossed aside Madam Su's hand: "Jingyu is my son, don't tell me I'm not also worried? Only Apothecary Leng...Apothecary Leng is how respectable of a person, even if it was the royal family that went to invite him, he may still not go. Today, him disdain our Manor is also not something we can't understand."

Su Zian muttered for a moment, then said: "Xi'er had kneeled in front of Leng Manor since the beginning. Apothecary Leng might give her face and come."

"My lord, you also said that Apothecary Leng's temper is indeterminable, and does his own thing. This...will this be fine?" Madam Su sank into deep worry.

If they were able to save her son, ask her to do anything and she would be willing!

All of a sudden, the movements on the bed had attracted over both people.

"Ow——" Su Jingyu vomitted out a mouthful of blood, then wordlessly fell back down.

"Jingyu, Jingyu!" Madam Su was so worried as to be at her wits' end. Her eyes were filled with tears. She was worried and mad at the same time, and regretfully said: "Jingyu, how are you? Are you alright? You must not scare your mother ah."

But, no matter how Madam Su rocked him, Su Jingyu was like a dead person, unmoving.

Madam Su immediately panicked, not knowing what to do. The her right now needed to find an outlet, therefore, she shifted her anger onto Su Luo's body: "It's all Su Luo, that little slut's, fault. If it was not for her, you would not have endured such bitterness! Inevitably, a day will come, inevitably, a day..."

Madam Su clenched her fists tightly, her fingernails dug deeply into her palm!

Just mentioning Su Luo, Su Zian's heart became even angrier.

He heavily slammed his hand on the table, and the table immediately split into pieces, turning into dust.

"This loathsome girl. Now, her wings have hardened!" Su Zian bit down hard on his teeth, grinding out these words.

Today, I asked Su Xi to bring that girl over, no matter how you say it, Jingyu's injuries were related to her.

However, not only did she not come, she actually ordered people to scratch Su Xi's face until it was like this! Nearly disfiguring her beauty!

In her heart, did it even have him, this father?!

The more Su Zian thought about it, the angrier he became. His face was covered in haze.

Madam Su took care of Su Jingyu, at an angle that Su Zian could not see, a very fierce, malicious and pungent expression crossed her eyes.

"Ow——" Su Jingyu once again spit out a mouthful of blood. Madam Su hurriedly used her handkerchief to wipe off the blood from the corner of his mouth.

"My lord, will it be okay if we continue like this? Jingyu is unable to endure for much longer..." Madam Su used the handkerchief to wipe the tears at the corner of her eyes, sorrowfully and distressed, she cried out.

"This won't do, I will immediately go into the palace to ask His Majesty for an imperial decree! Don't tell me Apothecary Leng is still able not to listen to His Majesty's imperial edict?" Su Zian also became anxious.

Even though Su Jingyu didn't make much of himself, he was, after all, Su Zian's only son. If something were to happen to him, then this would be a huge blow to

Su Manor.

Su Zian anxiously rushed out, his footsteps were like the wind with astonishing speed.

Madam Su could not pull him to a stop and could only watch helplessly as Su Zian left.

Seeing Su Zian's back as he left, a complicated light flashed through her eyes. She wanted to yell but could not open her mouth.

It couldn't be better said that Su Zian's luck was extremely good.

He had just arrived at the gate, and saw a luxurious, refined horse carriage stop in front of Su Manor.

He opened his eyes to look, on that carriage, hung a huge 'Leng' word.

A burst of ecstasy immediately sprung up in Su Zian's heart.

The carriage's curtain lifted up, revealing Apothecary Leng's mysterious, rosy, clear and bright face that was also very glossy.

Apothecary Leng was famous, naturally, Su Zian had seen him before.

Chapter 654 – Crafty plots and machinations

(5)

At this moment, he could not suppress the ecstasy in his heart, and he hurriedly stepped forward with large strides. He excitedly cupped his fists in greeting: “Apothecary Leng, I am Su Zian. Knowing Apothecary Leng would come, I waited especially at the gate, finally, you have arrived.”

Su Zian’s mind was able to think quickly, he changed that he was about to go out for an imperial decree, and instead said he had waited a long time at the gate. He used this to show his respect for Apothecary Leng.

Apothecary Leng coldly snorted and did not make a move to respond.

If it was not for Su Luo, that girl, who asked him to come, he would never come in the middle of the night to treat a patient, even if the Emperor had sent an imperial edict.

Merely waiting at the doorway, what worth was there in showing off like this?

Apothecary Leng only nodded indifferently towards him: “Where is the patient?”

Su Zian constrained the excitement in his heart, hurriedly leading the way: “This way please, the ground along the way is slippery, Apothecary Leng, please walk slowly.”

“Ok.” Apothecary Leng nodded, neither warm nor cold.

However, no matter how indifferent Apothecary Leng’s complexion was, Su Zian wouldn’t have minded.

In his opinion, the matter of this kind of outside expert having an eccentric

character was something normal.

If he was friendly and warm, he would doubt whether this was really Apothecary Leng or not.

“That Apothecary Leng could come to Su Manor, is Su Manor’s greatest honor. I, Su Zian thank you here in advance.”

Facing this humble attitude of Su Zian’s, Apothecary Leng looked down upon him even more. He coldly snorted: “Don’t need to thank this old man, it’s because you birthed a good daughter.”

Su Zian heard it, and immediately, his thoughts slanted.

Apothecary Leng was referring to Su Luo as Su Zian’s good daughter, but Su Zian completely did not think like this.

How would he possibly have thought that the relationship between Su Luo and Apothecary Leng wasn’t shallow? Moreover, it just so happened that Su Xi had run to kneel before Apothecary Leng’s doorway. Therefore, he inevitably and justifiably gave this credit to Su Xi.

Su Zian modestly said: “That girl has a hot-headed temper, she skips steps in her actions, but there is deep sibling feelings between her and Jingyu. If she has offended, Apothecary Leng, please forgive.”

“Offended? Great General Su, these words you said are reversed.” Apothecary Leng cast a puzzled glance at Su Zian, thinking, were they speaking of the same person?

“Eh?” Where was it reversed? Could it be that Apothecary Leng had offended Xi’er? How and where could this have happened ah? How was this possible?

“That girl is good, if you dare to treat her badly, then this old man will absolutely not let you off!” The normally cold Apothecary Leng would seldom praise a person.

Even though he was warned, Su Zian’s heart was bursting with ecstasy.

Apothecary Leng personally praised Xi’er, and even warned him to treat her well. This could be considered as him thinking extremely highly of her! Su Zian restrained the excitement in his heart and turned around to look for Su Xi.

But Su Zian looked left and right, not seeing Su Xi, he couldn't help but wonder: "That girl didn't return together with Apothecary Leng?"

"She had left a step earlier." The her Apothecary Leng meant, was Su Luo.

"So that's how it is." Su Zian gave a hollow laugh, then no longer spoke, but his heart was extremely moved.

Before, Apothecary Leng had cured the chopped off hands of the two siblings from the Liu family. The Liu family proclaimed everywhere that they had a good relationship with Apothecary Leng. When Su Zian heard this, he felt all kind of jealousy and envy.

But now, his, Su Zian's, daughter also was not lacking. Listening to Apothecary Leng's tone, he appreciated Xi'er very much. It may be assumed that through Xi'er, they were bound to be able to develop a long-term relationship with Apothecary Leng.

With Apothecary Leng as a backer, then Su Manor's position would raise to another level.

They had already arrived in front of Su Jingyu's courtyard.

Su Zian rushed in with quick steps, excitedly yelling towards Madam Su: "Madam, quickly come out to greet the guest, Apothecary Leng has come!"

Su Madam's hands, that were holding a silk handkerchief, trembled slightly.

Chapter 655 – Crafty plots and machinations

(6)

She glanced back and unbelievably saw Apothecary Leng step over the doorstep. Only after quite a while did her senses returned and she quickly went up to welcome him: “Apothecary Leng, you have finally come!”

Madam Su’s face trembled slightly, but in Su Zian’s eyes, he felt it was because she was too happy and moved.

Apothecary Leng’s pair of apathetic cold eyes that lacked any warmth, swept a glance at Madam Su and carelessly said: “Where is the patient?”

According to Luo girl’s words, this patient seemed very interesting. He must carefully study him.

“In here, please enter, Apothecary Leng.” Su Zian hurriedly led Apothecary Leng towards the front of Su Jingyu’s bed.

“Eh.” Apothecary Leng sat upright on the bedside, meticulously and carefully examined Su Jingyu.

On the side, Madam Su’s complexion was somewhat complex.

She stealthily pulled at Su Zian’s robe: “My lord, is this really.....” Apothecary Leng?

“Absolutely true, you can cheat neither the old nor young about this.” Su Zian vouched for him and guaranteed, “In the past, His Majesty had invited him for an examination. I was standing on the side, that’s why I recognize him.”

“How...how was it that in such a short time, how were you able to invite him?” This deep in the night, even if you went to ask for an imperial edict, no matter what, it would still have to wait until tomorrow morning, right?

Mentioning this, Su Zian was unable to suppress the ecstasy in his heart. He lowered his voice and explained the entire matter again. In the end, he said: "Madam, you would never have imagined it, right? Apothecary Leng unexpectedly regarded Xi'er this well. Before all this, if someone had said this to me, I would definitely not believe them. However, this is the truth! You don't have to worry about Jingyu's wounds anymore, with Apothecary Leng here, I guarantee there will be no problems."

Madam Su gripped her handkerchief tightly, a trace of confusion flashing through her eyes.

She clearly secretly told Su Xi to pretend to plead, don't need to be too sincere, but.....how were they able to invite Apothecary Leng over?

Also, how could Su Xi be chosen by Apothecary Leng?

Madam Su was simply perplexed even after pondering for hundreds of times.

Only after Apothecary Leng muttered to himself for a long time did he slowly open his eyes.

Su Zian quickly went up, apprehensively asking: "Apothecary Leng, my son...."

Apothecary Leng's complexion was solemn, stroking his beard for a long while, not speaking.

Su Zian stood in front of him on tenterhooks, his expression remaining nervous and deeply worried. His pair of eyes unwaveringly stared at Apothecary Leng.

Apothecary Leng frowned and said: "How did your son receive his injury?"

Su Zian explained in detail: "Today, he returned home from school. En route he was ambushed with attacks from all sides by many people. He was beaten to the extent that his five bowels and six viscera almost shifted positions....."

At this moment, Madam Su's complexion became pale, her pair of eyes staring rigidly at Apothecary Leng. Her eyes shone with a complicated light.

Su Zian finished speaking with great difficulty, afterwards, he determinedly looked towards Apothecary Leng.

"Re....." Apothecary Leng wasn't able to finish speaking the word 'fart', after recalling Su Luo's words, only then was he able to restrain himself. Indignantly

flinging his sleeves, he rigidly changed the words to: “Rest assured (1), this apothecary has a way.”

Since he had a way, why did Apothecary Leng look so furious, as if he was made a fool of? Su Zian was extremely puzzled.

Only now did the hands that Madam Su use to grip the handkerchief tightly, then quietly loosen. The cold sweat on her forehead slowly slid down.

Apothecary Leng, not batting an eyelid, swept Madam Su a glance. Madam Su suddenly felt her back become cold and her entire body become stiff.

When she carefully looked again, Apothecary Leng’s gaze had already swept by, his complexion was icily arrogant like an ice crystal. One could not see anything fishy from his expression.

Madam Su’s heart was nervous, so her eyes didn’t dare to look all around. She could only hang her head and remained silent.

Apothecary Leng used acupuncture to push out the clotted blood inside Su Jingyu’s body. Afterwards, he took out three pills of one kind of medicine and handed them over to Su Zian: “One piece everyday, remember, you must personally feed it to him.”

1) 放: *The Chinese by itself means release....together with the word 屁 we get the Chinese curse of releasing fart or to say it nicely ‘what nonsense’.* 放心 : *Is the Chinese for rest your heart...or feel reassured. Since the two phrases started with the same Chinese word, Apothecary Leng was able to get away with a switching a curse phrase for an reassurance phrase.*

Chapter 656 – Crafty plots and machinations

(7)

Madam Su's body trembled and she didn't dare to look at Apothecary Leng again.

Su Zian, on the other hand, completely did not notice any of his wife's abnormal movements. He looked at that piece of medicinal pill, a touch of excitement flashing across his face: "This is....."

"Advanced level medicinal pill, you may not recognize it." Apothecary Leng carelessly flung the medicinal pill into Su Zian's hands, then turned around to leave.

Su Zian solicitously caught up: "It's already deep into the night and the illumination is bad. It would be better for Apothecary Leng to stay at Su Manor and wait until tomorrow....."

Apothecary Leng cast a sidelong glance at him, enigmatically tossing out a sentence: "No matter how great the illumination is, it's still useless to a blind person."

After saying this sentence, he turned around and entered the carriage, returning to his own residence.

Only leaving behind Su Zian who was staring blankly and helplessly at the original spot.

He scanned his brain at a loss. What was the meaning behind Apothecary Leng's words?

No matter how much he thought about it, he could not understand and could only drop the subject.

Returning to the courtyard, after he had Su Jingyu eat the medicinal pill left by Apothecary Leng. As expected, his complexion had returned to a rosy glow, unlike the lifelessness from before.

Su Zian's entire face was filled with gratitude: "Apothecary Leng truly deserves to be called Apothecary Leng. Having taken just one piece of medicinal pill, it immediately had the desired effect. In all likelihood, Jingyu will wake up very soon."

Seeing Su Jingyu lying on the bed with his complexion restored to a rosy color, Madam Su's fists at her side clenched tightly.

Now that Apothecary Leng had unexpectedly inserted in like a wedge from the side, what should she do?

"My lord, the night is already so dark, tomorrow morning, you still have to wake up early to go to morning court. Quickly go and rest. This place will be taken care of by me, your concubine." Madam Su squeezed out a smile on her face.

Today, Su Zian was anxious and worried at the same time, indeed, he was somewhat exhausted.

He recalled the recent matter with the Jade Lake's Li family in the imperial court, those officials, in order to curry favor with the Jade Lake's Li family, deliberately set out to oppose him, pestering him beyond endurance.

This was all because of Su Luo.

Sometimes, he truly suspected that this daughter seemed to have come to demand repayment from him in this lifetime, making him repeatedly lose face.

Su Zian faintly groaned: "Then Jingyu will be left in your care, take care of him well, by all means, do not let any mishap happen to him again."

"Jingyu is birthed by this concubine, how could this concubine not properly take care of him, my lord, quickly go and rest." Madam Su smilingly sent off Su Zian.

After waiting for Su Zian to leave.

Inside the room, it was quiet and noiseless.

Slowly, Madam Su became somewhat tired, and she gave a drowsy yawn.

It was unknown how much time had passed, before a shadow leapt in from the window, coldly standing in front of Madam Su.

When Madam Su saw that figure, with a quiver, she immediately stood up, “Why did you come?”

Jade Lake’s Li family.

Located in the outskirts.

Within a radius of five kilometers, it was remote and uninhabited. But at the center of this region, a splendid and magnificent courtyard was constructed.

The entire courtyard was planted with fiery red maple trees, from afar, it looked like the burning flames of a phoenix, strongly battering the eyes of people looking.

This was the Jade Lake’s Li family’s courtyard in the city capital, everything was arranged based on the Jade Lake’s Palace’s Princess’s tastes. It was constructed based on the Jade Lake’s Fairy’s preferences.

Under the maple tree, was arranged a table full of exquisite food.

Jade Lake’s Fairy, Li Aoqiong, and there was also their second uncle, Li Yaoxiang.

Right now, the three people’s moods were very good, lifting wine and drinking face-to-face, talking and smiling quietly.

“Aoqiong’s plans this time are not bad, very soon, that girl will kneel in front of our Li family’s doorway.” Li Yaoxiang delightfully drank his cup of wine.

He remembered that day when he went to Su Manor, with Nangong Liuyun appearing halfway through to attack, destroying his plans and making it fall through. The petty Li Yaoxiang still bore a grudge even now.

Li Aoqiong laughed out loud: “Second Uncle flatters me too much! Honestly, it’s that girl who is overestimating her own abilities. This nephew merely arranged a small scheme and nothing more.”

“Indeed, one small loathsome girl dares to oppose the Jade Lake’s Li family. If

we were to so easily let her go, where would we place our family's face?" Li Yaoxiang gave a cold humph.

Chapter 657 – Crafty plots and machinations

(8)

Li Aoqiong nodded and said: “She dares to bully my younger sister, this point absolutely cannot be forgiven. Humph, wait until she kneels before the Li family’s door.....”

Li Aoqiong’s eyes shone with a trace of malicious light.

It’s easy to come, but want to leave, you won’t be able to.

Li Yaoyao toasted with a smile on her face: “Then, Yaoyao will give thanks to Second Uncle and Big Brother’s defense in advance, Yaoyao will empty her glass first to show respect.”

Finished speaking, Li Yaoyao drained the wine in her cup in one gulp.

“Good!” Li Yaoxiang praised, “Worthy of being called Li family’s good daughter, come, fill it again.”

Just when the three people from Li Family were celebrating, suddenly, a black figure silently appeared beside them.

“Reporting back to Master, Apothecary Leng went to Su Manor.”

One short sentence, made all three people freeze immediately.

“How is it possible that Apothecary Leng would go to Su Manor? Hasn’t he always ignored these mundane matters?” Li Yaoyao’s hand heavily placed the wine cup down, her long, shapely eyebrows knitting tightly.

Li Aoqiong also frowned: “What’s going on with this Leng Yan? How could Su Manor’s request possibly get him to move?”

Li Yaoxiang coldly snorted: “What happened afterwards?”

The person dressed in black, with lowered head and eyes, and a steady voice, said: “After Apothecary Leng arrived, it didn’t take him long to cure the eldest son of the Su family.”

“Bang!” the wine cup in the Jade Lake’s Fairy’s hand ruthlessly smashed to the ground, the wine cup immediately breaking into pieces of fine powder, “Waste! A bunch of wastes! What is Leng Yan doing?”

Li Aoqiong hurriedly patted her shoulder to appease her: “Yaoyao, don’t be angry, don’t get angry, Older Brother will not let you suffer any grievances.”

Li Yaoyao’s complexion was covered in hazy displeasure, very quickly, a cold light flashed in her eyes: “Humph, believe you can solve this match just like that by inviting Leng Yan? Su Luo, you think too lowly of me, Li Yaoyao! This time you have to kneel in front of me, you have to!”

“Has Yaoyao already figured out a way?” Li Yaoxiang asked. This niece was usually smart, but whenever it touched upon Nangong Liuyun, her brain seemed to be somewhat lacking.

“Yes! We can use a gigantic eight-legged scorpion poison.” The corner of Li Yaoyao’s mouth hooked into a sinister smirk, “Gigantic eight-legged scorpion poison, only Celestial Spirit Water can resolve it. And as everyone knows, we, the Jade Lake’s Li family, never lacks Celestial Spirit Water!”

“Isn’t Leng Yan very capable? Just let him personally declare this result to Su Zian. I want to see, at this critical juncture, whether Su Zian will choose his son or his daughter!” Li Yaoyao’s entire face was twisted with malevolence. In the dimness of the night, her eyes flashed with a weird radiance.

She wanted to let Su Luo personally see her father sacrifice her. Then, afterwards, she will have to kneel before her and beg. Whenever she thought of this, Li Yaoyao’s heart would feel happy.

Li Yaoxiang’s expression was tranquil: “This method is very good, but Yaoyao, Leng Yan will be your senior brother from the same teacher, you must not offend him excessively.”

The corner of Yaoyao’s mouth raised in a treacherous smile: “Second Uncle, do

you think Grandmaster Rong Yun, after having me as a disciple, would still care about Leng Yan?”

Li Aoqiong already endorsed Li Yaoyao: “Second Uncle, you must not have groundless fear. According to this younger sister’s aptitude, Grandmaster Rong Yun will only think highly of her.”

Li Yaoxiang also thought it was so, but still said a sentence of caution: “Yaoyao, the most important thing right now is to have Grandmaster Rong Yun accept you as his disciple. As long as you have entered his door, Nangong Liuyun is bound to treat you favorably.”

These years, in order to be under Grandmaster Rong Yun’s name, it could be said that Li Yaoyao had put in a lot of effort.

Not only Li Yaoyao, it should be said that the entire Jade Lake’s Li family’s manpower, financial and physical resources were involved. There were all kinds of extravagant gifts used to trouble people for favors.

“Yes, you guys should feel assured, I already have ninety percent grasp of Grandmaster Rong Yan.” The corner of Li Yaoyao’s mouth raised in a fully confident smile.

Chapter 658 – Crafty plots and machinations

(9)

Grandmaster Rong Yun, was formerly one of the few Master level Apothecaries on the continent. Recently, news had spread that this Master Apothecary had unexpectedly broken through to Grandmaster Apothecary.

Once this news came out, immediately, the entire continent became fervent.

Grandmaster Rong Yun's background was extremely mysterious, and he did not belong to any sect. As a result, many sects wished to invite him in so they could rise in prestige.

However, Grandmaster Rong Yun was not only at the summit of refining medicines, but was also strong in martial arts. As for how strong he was, nobody knew.

“When Second Uncle received the news, it said that Grandmaster Rong Yun will arrive in the imperial capital in only a few days. Before he arrives, we must first dispose off that loathsome girl.” Li Yaoxiang coldly snorted.

When Madam Su saw the black-clothed person in front of her, her lips trembled slightly.

After all, she was standing on the weaker side since the beginning when she decided to cooperate with the Jade Lake's Li family.

“Feed this to him.” the black-clothed person said coldly.

“What is this?” Madam Su's complexion was aghast, a trace of fear appearing in her heart.

“You should feel assured, he won't die.” the black-clothed person looked at Madam Su's deathly white appearance, the corner of his mouth flashing a

mocking expression.

“Are you certain there will be no problems?” At this very moment, Madam Su’s heart was somewhat regretful.

She regretted that in a moment of impulse, she had agreed to the Jade Lake’s Li family’s proposal.

From the beginning, they also said that Jingyu would not meet with a mishap, but when she saw Jingyu spat out mouthful of blood over and over. It was as if her entire heart was being gripped tightly.

“Madam Su, now we are on the same boat, you already lost the opportunity to jump ship.” a cold smile flashed through the black-clothed person’s eyes, “This medicine will not kill anybody, however it will force Su Luo to kneel in front of our Li Manor’s gates. Because only the Jade Lake’s Li family has the antidote.”

Madam Su grinded her teeth saying: “Okay!”

The black-clothed person did not lie to her, now she already does not have a way out. She could only brace herself to move forward.

However luckily the the prospects up ahead were bright.

As long as she could eliminate Su Luo that loathsome girl, then Su Manor would return to its former tranquil days. Her children would not be harmed by her.

The black-clothed person, was also the Jade Lake fairy. Her gaze swept a glance at Su Jingyu, who was lying on the bed. The corner of her mouth raised into a mocking arc. She turned around and jump out the window and very quickly disappeared into the night.

Madam Su looked on the bed at Su Jingyu whose complexion had returned to peacefulness, bit her teeth and approached him: “Jingyu, this plan you have also agreed to.....good child, you just need to endure a bit more, and very soon you will be fine.....”

Madam Su pried open Su Jingyu’s mouth, and poured the black liquid medicine inside the porcelain bottle into Su Jingyu’s mouth.

The medicine entered his mouth and for a very long time there was no

reaction. Only then did Madam Su feel slightly relieved.

Only after disposing of the porcelain bottle did she return to her room to rest.

Early morning of the second day.

Su Zian had woken up very early. He had finished freshening up and was about to go to morning court. Just at this moment an unexpected bitter yell echoed in Su Manor!

“Ahhh——”

A mournful yelling sound broke the darkness and serenity of dawn. The lamps in the entire Su Manor were light up in succession.

Su Zian was able to discern that this sound originated from Su Jingyu's courtyard. How could he even think about morning court. He took large strides to walked towards that courtyard.

When he had walked near, he could smell a burst of stink coming from inside.

In large strides, he step over the doorsteps and saw Su Jingyu currently sitting on the bed with his head lowered and vomiting

Su Zian distressingly walked up with quick steps: “Jingyu, you are awake? How do you feel now?”

However, the moment Su JIngYu raised his head, Su Zian with ‘thump thump thump’ sounds retreated three steps. His entire face was colored in astonishment.

“You....you....you.....your face?”

Now, Su Jingyu's face that was still rosy from yesterday.

Chapter 659 – Crafty plots and machinations

(10)

However now, it was pitch-black, darker than the first night of Lunar New Year's, like the bottom of a pot.

The stuff that he vomited out, scattered and emitted a horrible stench, it was unbearable and made people dizzy.

Su Jingyu glanced blankly at Su Zian. Afterwards, his eyelids flipped over, and once again, he lost consciousness.

Su Zian's heart was extremely surprised: "Someone come, quickly go invite Apothecary Leng! Hurry!!!"

"Master, Apothecary Leng, he.....is not easy to invite." The steward that hurriedly rushed over hesitated and said.

"Blockhead! You might not be able to invite him over, but there is someone who can! Quickly call Su Xi, quickly, ask Su Xi to go and invite him!" Su Zian still remembered, Apothecary Leng regarded Su Xi very favorably. If she were to go and invite him, then he would certainly come.

Su Xi was pulled up by the wet nurse from inside her blankets. She bewilderedly opened her eyes, very puzzled: "Wet nurse, are you saying that Apothecary Leng sees me favorably?"

The wet nurse, in glowing spirits, said: "That's right, this is exactly what the master said. He said that if Fifth Miss was to invite him, then he would definitely come. Come, Miss, get dressed."

Su Xi still felt that this was inconceivable: "But, I don't even know who is Apothecary Leng.....how can I invite him?"

This was the honest truth, however, nobody would believe it.

The wet nurse smilingly said: "Is the Fifth Miss still muddled from sleep? It has already spread throughout the entire manor. Last night, Apothecary Leng coming over was all to the Fifth Miss's credit."

"My credit?" Su Xi pointed to her own nose.

"Right, all to the Fifth Miss's credit. If not, how could Apothecary Leng have come to our manor? Oh, that's right, according to what the servants heard him say, Apothecary Leng even warned the master, telling him not to treat you badly."

"Ah?" Su Xi opened her eyes wide until they were huge. Her eyes were full of bewilderment. However, very quickly, within this bewildered expression, a flash of glowing spirits appeared, "Could this be true? Could it be that I am not dreaming?"

"This naturally is real! Come, Miss, quickly make yourself presentable, the Young Master's illness is very grave."

Su Xi skeptically said: "Then fine, I will take a trip to Leng Manor, but if I cannot invite him over, then you guys can't blame me."

Su Xi freshened herself and got dressed. She hurriedly went to Leng Manor.

Just as her carriage arrived at Leng Manor, she immediately saw an old man in high spirits come out from the door.

In the doorway knelt a whole lot of people, these people, seeing him, all excitedly shouted: "Apothecary Leng, Apothecary Leng, please help!"

However, Apothecary Leng did not even glance sideways, his footsteps moved hurriedly, without stopping the slightest bit.

It was as if his face was shrouded in icy frost, his features were like condensed crystallized ice, appearing to be in a very bad mood.

"Apoth....." Su Xi's heart was nervous as she anxiously and frightenedly walked towards Apothecary Leng to make her salute.

Apothecary Leng saw the carriage beside her, and he swept her a sharp glance: "Miss Su?"

“Yes! I, this female, is Su Xi, the fifth of the family. Apothecary Leng, my older brother.....” Su Xi’s words weren’t even finished.

Apothecary Leng waved his hands: “Get in the carriage, let’s go.”

After speaking, without another word, he got into Su Manor’s carriage.

“Huh?” Su Xi’s entire body froze from being distracted.

Wasn’t it said that Apothecary Leng was arrogant to the point of being insufferable? Wasn’t it said that Apothecary Leng saw human life as if it was mustard grass? Wasn’t it said that Apothecary Leng was very, very, very difficult to invite?

She still hadn’t finished speaking and Apothecary Leng had already gotten into Su Manor’s carriage?

Su Xi originally suspected that this Apothecary Leng was a fake, but seeing so many people kneeling on the ground begging him to save a life, how could he be a fake?

“Still not coming into the carriage?” Apothecary Leng’s dignified voice could be heard saying.

“Com-coming.” Su Xi quickly lifted up the corner of her dress and excitedly jumped up into the carriage.

Wet nurse truly did not lie, Apothecary Leng really was treating her favorably!

Chapter 660 – High Grade Celestial Spirit Water (1)

Su Xi was able to invite Apothecary Leng to come to the residence.

Su Zian saw that Su Xi truly had been able to invite Apothecary Leng to come. He gave her a praising look.

This daughter was more useful! Su Luo, compared to Su Xi, was just a lump of dung!

Afterwards, he excitedly hurried over to welcome him: “Great Master, you should quickly come and see, something is wrong with Su Jingyu ah!”

Apothecary Leng’s expression became slightly stern, he frowned and said: “That is impossible.” Apothecary Leng was still very confident about his methods to treat illnesses, how could it possibly have worsened?

Apothecary Leng, in an ice-cold manner, pushed Su Zian away. With a cold expression, he sat in front of the bed and began to take his pulse.

Apothecary Leng maintained his icy expression, nobody was able to make out anything from observing his face.

After examining for a long time, his complexion became somewhat unexpected, as if in deep thought: “How can this be? Within this, in the end..... it is impossible for this to worsen ah.”

“Apothecary Leng, this, in the end, what happened?” Su Zian saw Apothecary Leng’s displeased expression. He didn’t dare press him too much, otherwise, he might toss his sleeves and just leave.

Apothecary Leng stroked his beard, and very concisely, said: “Your son has been poisoned.”

“Poisoned? How could he be poisoned? Why didn’t you discover it yesterday?” Su Zian anxiously asked.

Apothecary Leng snorted twice, flung his sleeves in anger, and said: “Are you doubting this apothecary’s ability?”

“No no no, Apothecary Leng, you misunderstand, I meant to say.....” Su Zian was so anxious that his brows were beaded with sweat.

Facing the continent’s renowned Apothecary Leng, Su Zian could only feel his heart go weak. Very naturally, he would act meek and subservient.

Apothecary Leng cast an angry glance at him: “You don’t need to explain, this poison was taken yesterday after I had left.”

Su Zian’s eyes widened until it become huge!

What? Yesterday, after Apothecary Leng had left, Su Jingyu was then poisoned by someone? This was impossible!

Perhaps Apothecary Leng was not capable, therefore, he would say something like this.....

What kind of person was Apothecary Leng? The mere flicker in Su Zian’s eyes, he was able to catch it. Apothecary Leng coldly sneered: “Are you thinking this apothecary is not capable, therefore deliberately said some groundless words to cheat you?”

“How could I dare, how would I dare.....” Su Zian’s forehead was full of sweat, if he really angered Apothecary Leng to the point of him leaving, then Su Jingyu would truly lose his life.

Because, if other people were to find out that, due to doubting Apothecary Leng’s medical expertise, he then tossed his sleeves and left Su Manor in anger, which other apothecary would dare take over ah?

Apothecary Leng glared at him again: “If it wasn’t out of consideration for your daughter, this apothecary would be disinclined to care about these annoying matters, and would immediately turn around and leave!”

“Yes, yes, yes.” Su Zian was so anxious that his forehead was covered with sweat: “Apothecary Leng, don’t take offense, and by all means, you must not

go.”

While Su Zian spoke, he also pulled at Su Xi who was standing on the side.

Su Xi, being pulled like this by her dad, nearly fell down on the spot. She was very puzzled, her pair of eyes staring blankly at her father.

While Su Zian was forcing out a dry laugh, his other hand pulled Su Xi into a kneeling position: “Why haven’t you quickly thanked Apothecary Leng?”

His words were useless, but Apothecary Leng cared so much about Xi’er, this ought to be more useful.

Apothecary Leng nevertheless frowned, flung his sleeves and coldly snorted. Randomly calling a girl over to thank to him? What did this mean? It was as Su girl had said, Su Zian, this man’s, sincerity was unreliable!

“Last night, someone secretly poisoned your son with Gigantic Eight-legged Scorpion poison. This poison is very fierce and toxic, it can almost be said that there is no remedy. In addition, if the antidote is not given in twenty-four hours, he will die from vomiting blood.”

Su Zian immediately became stupefied.

“Apothecary Leng, just now, you said this poison.....is nearly incurable by medicine. Then. in other words, there may still be a way?”

Chapter 661 – High Grade Celestial Spirit Water (2)

Su Zian impatiently asked.

Apothecary Leng nodded his head slightly: “It’s Gigantic Eight-Legged Scorpion poison, the only antidote for this is Celestial Spirit Water. Unfortunately, Celestial Spirit Water is very rarely seen in this world, it is sought but rarely discovered.”

“Celestial Spirit Water?!” Su Zian nearly jumped up.

Their Su Manor has Celestial Spirit Water, more accurate to say, they had it before.

However, what made his heart ache was that, the Celestial Spirit Water inside the manor was stolen.

“Great Master, where can Celestial Spirit Water be found? No matter the price, we must cure Jingyu. I only have this one son!” Su Zian was extremely anxious.

Apothecary Leng thought for a bit, finally, he still sighed and said: “Speaking of Celestial Spirit Water, then the Jade Lake’s Li family has it.”

“Jade Lake’s Li family?” Su Zian slowly said this word by word.

“Yes, the Jade Lake’s Li family has a block of stalactite, every day, it produces a drop of Celestial Spirit Water. It takes three years to fill up a bottle. In order to save your son, we need at least an entire bottle of Celestial Spirit Water.”

Su Zian irritably walked back and forth inside the room.

Jingyu’s injury was originally from an evil scheme by the Jade Lake’s Li family, the purpose was to draw Su Luo to go apologize and beg for forgiveness.

However, Su Manor unexpectedly was able to invite Apothecary Leng to come, and was able to cure Jingyu. However, in less than one night's time, Jingyu was poisoned again.

“This poison.....” was clearly done by the Jade Lake's Li Family! The purpose was to force Su Luo to go apologize and beg for forgiveness!

Su Zian was not an idiot, on the contrary, he was very shrewd. Otherwise, he wouldn't have been able to climb to the position of the Great General that protect the nation at his age.

“Apothecary Leng, aside from this, is there really no other place where we can find Celestial Spirit Water?” Su Zian asked, full of expectation.

“Of course there is.” Apothecary Leng snorted darkly, “My master, Grandmaster Rong Yun, has collected a lot of Celestial Spirit Water. However, His honorable elder is like a divine dragon, you can see the head but not the tail. Even I cannot find him.”

Hearing what was said, Su Zian's complexion was full of disappointment.

But very quickly, a brilliant light flashed through his eyes: “Since it's like this, then we can only let her go!”

Since this disaster was caused by Su Luo, then she ought to assume all the responsibility.

Su Zian raised his hands: “People come, bring Su Luo here.”

Zi Xi accepted the order and left.

However, with his strength, he was not able to bring Su Luo over. Rather, he had to use the polite word ‘invite’.

Su Luo had long ago become aware of the twists and turns of the current situation. But she could not avoid this matter, therefore, she also brought Lu Luo and came over.

Seeing Su Zian, Su Luo pretended to be at a loss: “Don't know for what matter did Father call this daughter over?”

Su Zian's face was gloomy and cold, his pair of eyes fiercely glaring at Su Luo. A strong aura was sent to suppress Su Luo.

However, nowadays, Su Zian's strength was already not strong enough of a deterrence force for Su Luo. As a result, she stood there, calm and collected as before, her complexion as calm as water, her appearance showing no difference.

Su Zian's heart was somewhat flustered.

Originally, he wanted to show off his strength, however, it was not the least bit useful.

Su Zian coldly smiled: "Su Luo, you come over here!"

Su Luo obediently walked over.

Su Zian pointed to Su Jingyu on the bed, with a frosty expression, he said to Su Luo: "Look, look at your brother, because of you, he has now ended up like this. If he doesn't get the antidote, within twenty-four hours, he will die!"

Su Luo's forehead knotted slightly.

According to the information she had learned, Su Jingyu was clearly poisoned by Madam Su.

Su Luo's eyes looked towards Madam Su.

Coming in contact with Su Luo's gaze, Madam Su's heart suddenly shook, feeling as if she had been seen through.

Su Luo shot Madam Su a glance that was a smile but not quite one, and then she returned her sight towards Su Zian: "Honorable Father, who can prove that it was because of me that Big Brother had received these injuries?"

Chapter 662 – High Grade Celestial Spirit Water (3)

“Su Luo! Things have already reached this stage, and you still want to quibble? If it wasn’t for you insisting on being with His Highness Prince Jin, that hugely offended the Jade Lake’s Li family. Then, why would they take action against our Su Manor? You brought this disaster to Su Manor, and yet you still won’t admit to it?!” Su Zian raised his hand, wishing he could slap her.

However, fortunately, he still had a bit of reasoning left. Knowing that Su Luo’s strength was out of the ordinary, only then did he stiffly restrain his hand.

Su Luo also frowned: “What does Honorable father want to do?”

Su Zian flung his sleeves, using a tone that was intolerant of being rejected, and said: “You will go to the Jade Lake’s Li family, and apologize to the Jade Lake’s Fairy! At that time, they will naturally hand over the antidote!”

Su Luo indifferently sneered: “How could just apologizing be enough? I will still have to vow to never see His Highness Prince Jin or something like that, right?”

“Su Luo! Are you saying you don’t want to go? How could you do this? He is our older brother, and it was also because of you that he became like this. You are simply too cold-blooded, too disgusting!” Su Xi! seeing that Su Luo did not even listen to what Su Zian said, rushed forth to place all the blame on Su Luo.

Su Luo cast her an apathetic glance, then her gaze firmly locked on to Su Zian: “Apart from this, are there no other methods?”

Su Zian coldly snorted: “Only if you go apologize to the Jade Lake’s Li family can we retrieve back the Celestial Spirit Water!”

“Celestial Spirit Water?” Su Luo’s expression changed slightly, as if she was extremely astonished.

“Yes, just that Celestial Spirit Water. Only Celestial Spirit Water can cure the poison in your big brother’s body!”

“But Celestial Spirit Water...” Su Luo hummed and hawed.

“Using you to exchange for Celestial Spirit Water, that is still looking up at you! Su Luo, do you even know how precious Celestial Spirit Water is? Such a huge, powerful Jade Lake’s Li family can only get one bottle in three years! A hundred you would not even make up for a single bottle! Using you to exchange for it can still be considered you profiting.” In fact, Su Xi basically did not know what Celestial Spirit Water was, she only wanted to endlessly disparage Su Luo.

Su Zian was very dissatisfied with Su Luo’s hesitant expression: “Su Luo, when conducting one’s self, you must not be so selfish! Today, you must go to the Li family, even if you don’t want to, you still have to go. Guards——”

Following immediately after Su Zian had finished speaking, two robust men, like iron towers, appeared at the doorway.

The corner of Su Luo’s mouth slowly hooked into a cold sneer.

She observed what’s happening now in her space.

The little divine dragon had already woken up. He was currently soaking comfortably in the bathtub, and the water he used to bathe in was exactly the Celestial Spirit Water that these people regarded as extremely precious.

One hundred of her could not make up for a single bottle of Celestial Spirit Water? Simply too funny.

If she was to take out the Celestial Spirit Water now, and after Li Yaoyao found out, wouldn’t she be angry enough to spit out blood?

Able to make Li Yaoyao angry enough to spit out blood, this was Su Luo’s favorite thing to do.

“If I brought out Celestial Spirit Water, then I won’t have to go to the Jade Lake’s Li family, right?” Li Yaoyao was still at home, waiting for her to come kneel and beg for forgiveness. Simply too funny.

Su Zian’s eyes stared blankly. He still hasn’t spoken yet before seeing Su Xi sneer a few times: “Hmph, you said that you can take out Celestial Spirit Water?”

Who are you trying to deceive!”

Su Luo did not pay any attention to this clown that just jumped in, her pair of deep eyes stared fixedly at Su Zian.

Su Zian’s face remained cold, his eyes had a penetrating chilliness: “Su Luo, are you stalling for time to wait for His Highness Prince Jin? A pity, His Highness Prince Jin was sent out by His Majesty to carry out official business. No matter how long you stall, it won’t be enough time to wait until he gets back!”

Su Luo smiled faintly, from within her sleeves, she brought out a bottle of Celestial Spirit Water and tossed it at Su Zian: “It just so happens that Apothecary Leng is here, we can invite him, the wise elder, to examine if this is a real bottle of Celestial Spirit Water or not.”

Su Zian looked at the white jade porcelain bottle in his hand.

He opened the porcelain bottle and slightly sniffed the contents. Immediately, he knew this absolutely was Celestial Spirit Water.

Chapter 663 – High Grade Celestial Spirit Water (4)

Su Manor once had a bottle of Celestial Spirit Water, and it was extremely treasured for many generations. Su Zian had also seen it on more than one occasion, and also drank a few drops. Therefore, with one glance, he was able to recognize that this indeed was Celestial Spirit Water.

Moreover, if he did not guess wrongly, this bottle of Celestial Spirit Water's medicinal properties was a lot better compared to the bottle that Su Manor once had.

Su Zian's face revealed a puzzled expression, but he still handed the bottle of Celestial Spirit Water over to Apothecary Leng.

Since the moment when Su Luo entered, she secretly greeted Apothecary Leng. As a result, Apothecary Leng did not hastily acknowledge her.

Apothecary Leng accepted the white jade porcelain bottle.

Swayed it a bit, shook it a little, then sniffed it a bit.

"This is wrong....." Apothecary Leng mumbled to himself, his face had a puzzled expression.

"How is it wrong?" Su Zian already confirmed this was Celestial Spirit Water, therefore, he looked at Apothecary Leng with doubt.

Su Luo's face was also somewhat puzzled, this was clearly Celestial Spirit Water, how could it be wrong?

"This is not Celestial Spirit Water." Apothecary Leng sampled a drop, seeing Su Zian and Su Luo's perplexed expressions, he then gave a firm answer: "It is more accurate to say that this is High Grade Celestial Spirit Water."

“High Grade Celestial Spirit Water? Are there distinctions among Celestial Spirit Waters?” Su Zian asked.

Apothecary Leng shot him a disdainful glance: “Ignorant and inexperienced! Celestial Spirit Water naturally has high and low grade classifications. For example, the Celestial Spirit Water from the Jade Lake’s Li family, collected as drops from the block of stalactite, that is the low grade kind. How could its medicinal potency even be compared to this High Grade Celestial Spirit Water?”

Once these words were said, Su Zian was momentarily dumbfounded.

If it was said like this, then wouldn’t the Celestial Spirit Water, that was passed down from generation after generation in the Su Manor as a treasured object, be at most, only considered Low Grade Celestial Spirit Water?

Because it was passed down from generation to generation, as a result, that bottle of Celestial Spirit Water was treated as an extremely precious treasure.

But how could Su Luo, this loathsome girl, be able to so casually take out a bottle of Celestial Spirit Water? Moreover, the one she took out was a high grade one?

“Luoluo, where did you get this bottle of Celestial Spirit Water? Quickly tell it to daddy!” Su Zian, with one action, grabbed Su Luo and asked excitedly!

The corner of Su Luo’s mouth curved up into a sneer.

Luoluo? Wasn’t this the first time that Su Zian had used such an intimate name to address her?

If it wasn’t for the matter of this High Grade Celestial Spirit Water, why would Su Zian address her in such an intimate manner?

Su Luo, without batting an eye, pushed aside his hand, her gaze deep yet vigorous. A sweet smile emerged at the corner of her lips: “Can’t Father guess the answer?”

Seeing this kind of expression on Su Luo’s face, Su Zian was slightly distracted. Immediately, he realized: “Could it be.....His Highness Prince Jin?!”

The corner of Su Luo’s mouth curved into a slight sneering arc.

Since Su Zian believed it so, then I’ll just let him continue believing it. This way,

she would not be revealed and could also demonstrate how much His Highness Prince Jin valued her. A matter of killing two birds with one stone, what could she have against it?

“It really is His Highness Prince Jin....” Su Zian mumbled to himself.

Before, even though His Highness Prince Jin expressed Su Luo’s importance to him, but Su Zian had never believed it. He always felt that among this was merely a bluff.

But now, His Highness Prince Jin even gifted Su Luo with High Grade Celestial Spirit Water, this was sufficient to prove His Highness Prince Jin’s affection towards Su Luo.

The more it was like this, the more jittery Su Zian’s heart became.

Because the Jade Lake’s Li family was like a towering mountain heavily pressing down. It was like a sharp sword hanging over his head, making things exceedingly difficult for him.

Su Luo, seeing his hesitation, naturally guessed ninety percent of his thoughts. But she was having fun watching this play, so she didn’t expose his thoughts.

“Honorable father, since we already have High Grade Celestial Spirit Water, why not let big brother drink it first? Big brother’s appearance seem to show that he is in extreme pain.” Su Luo’s eyes hung down slightly and looked towards Su Jingyu, who was moaning painfully on the bed.

Chapter 664 – High Grade Celestial Spirit Water (5)

Su Zian suddenly came to a realization and hurriedly looked towards Apothecary Leng: “Will directly feeding this to him be fine?”

Apothecary Leng gave a slight snort: “Yeah.”

Ever since Su Luo brought out the bottle of Celestial Spirit Water, Madam Su hadn't said a single sentence. She rigidly stood on the side with a very stiff complexion.

Seeing Su Zian personally feed Su Jingyu the Celestial Spirit Water, an awkward and difficult expression flashed across her face.

Could it be the scheme they had arranged with great difficulty would be destroyed by a bottle of Celestial Spirit Water that this loathsome girl had brought out? Her heart was unreconciled, definitely would not be reconciled!

Recalling the black-clothed person from yesterday, Madam Su irritably clenched her fist tightly: What should she do?

Madam Su tried to think of a way, but could not think of a method, so she could only watch as Su Zian fed the medicine to Su Jingyu.

After he finished feeding him, Su Jingyu's originally ugly complexion gradually started to recover.

“It's not advisable to be so noisy in the sickroom, let us all go out. Only need to leave Madam Su here to attend to him, is enough.” Apothecary Leng took the lead and stepped out of the room.

These words were an exact fit to Madam Su's intentions, one could only see her nod her head and hurriedly say: “You can be at ease and leave, this place still

has me.”

Su Luo’s foot that was about to step over the doorstep paused slightly. She turned her eyes around and took a glance at Madam Su. At this moment, Madam Su’s eyes were also looking at Su Luo.

Su Luo neither dodged nor avoided her gaze. The corner of her indistinct and bottomless eyes, were raised into an enigmatic smiling expression.

Madam Su was distracted momentarily by her smile.

However, she could not understand the meaning in Su Luo’s eyes. She only knew that Su Luo was pretending to be a model while causing mischief behind the scenes.

The pitiful Madam Su, now, if she could give it more thought, maybe the tragedy after this would not have occurred.

Speaking of which, after Apothecary Leng and the others had left. There were only two people, Madam Su and Su Jingyu, left inside the room.

Madam Su sat at the bedside, tenderly wiping away the sweat on Su Jingyu’s forehead. With a soft tone, she slowly said: “Jingyu, I have let you suffer hardship. Please do not blame your mother, your mother was also left with no choice.”

Su Jingyu lay there motionless, both eyes closed tightly, having sank into a deep coma.

Madam Su still wanted to say something, but a slight sound came from outside the window.

Madam Su alertly raised her eyes, but only felt her eyes become slightly dazzled. When she looked again, she discovered a black-clothed person standing in front of her.

Her entire body was shrouded in a black robe, even her face was covered by a black cloth.

However, looking at the detailed and exquisite curves, Madam Su, in one glance, judged that this was a woman. As a result, Madam Su subconsciously connected her to the black-clothed person from last night.

“What do you want to do?” Seeing the black-clothed person slowly approach closer step-by-step, an alarmed expression flashed through Madam Su’s eyes.

The black-clothed person’s eyes had a sneer in its depths: “Madam Su, things have already reached this stage, what are you afraid of?”

“What exactly do you want to do!” Madam Su blocked in front of Su Jingyu, her face revealing a terrified expression.

At this moment, Madam Su was extremely regretful.

Su Jingyu was her only son, seeing him being tormented by poison time and time again, her motherly instincts and heart were simply crying blood.

If she had known earlier that her son would receive this much suffering, then, no matter what, she would not have agreed to this plan.

The black-clothed person smiled coldly and sinisterly, then gave Madam Su the poison: “Feed it to him.”

“What is this.....” Madam Su was so anxious that she instantly shook her head.

“Rest assured, the poison will not kill him. But it will drag Su Luo, that loathsome girl, into troubled waters!” the black-clothed person seeing Madam Su continuously shake her head, smiled sinisterly before taking out another bottle of pitch-black liquid medicine. She swept it past under Madam Su’s nose.

That pungent smell made Madam Su’s face suddenly go pale: “This is One Shot Silencer?”

One Shot Silencer, as the name implied, by just drinking a mouthful, the person’s soul would be taken to the Western Pure Land of Ultimate Bliss (1).

1) Western Pure Land of Ultimate Bliss, aka underworld, world of the dead. Or whatever you call the place where your soul goes after death

Chapter 665 – High Grade Celestial Spirit Water

“Now, I’m giving you a chance to choose. Do you want to feed him this bottle of slow-acting poison or this One Shot Silencer?” The black-clothed person’s eyes curved into a shallow smile, and coldly laughed, “Of course, you can also choose to yell loudly. However, if it is like that, Madam Su, you also won’t be able to escape.”

The black-clothed person got close to Madam Su’s ears and quietly said: “Jade Lake’s Li family, will not let you and your kids go..... when that time comes, the sole remaining person from the next generation in Su Manor will only be Su Luo.....”

Madam Su’s entire body shook, then she rigidly stood on the spot.

She opened her eyes wide, rigidly glaring at the black-clothed person in front of her!

Even though she was covered in black-cloth and there was a black scarf masking her face, but Madam Su knew that this person was indeed the Jade Lake’s fairy!

She never expected that the Jade Lake’s fairy would be this malicious!

At this moment, Madam Su was so regretful that her intestines turned green. Her eyes were filled with hatred, wishing she could pounce up and chop the Jade Lake’s fairy into pieces.

But the corner of the black-clothed person’s eyes had a smile. That sneer was like a smile but not a smile and was very obvious.

The Jade Lake’s fairy was simply confident that she would follow her instructions!

In fact, Madam Su simply could not refuse. Because the consequences of refusing, she could not afford to bear it.

Madam Su's eyes held tears as she silently took the bottle of poison from the black-clothed person's hands. Very carefully, she supported Su Jingyu, however, no matter what, she could not feed it to him.

In order to avoid the long nights with many dreams (1), the black-clothed person's hands shook the One Shot Silencer in her hand: "Do you need this fairy to help you feed this to him?"

The Jade Lake's fairy! You bully people until it's intolerable! Madam Su dared to be angry but didn't dare say a word. She could only hasten the movements of her hands.

"Jingyu, do not worry, Apothecary Leng is outside. He will quickly cure you. Good child, drink this medicine in one mouthful...." Madam Su endured the anguish in her heart and poured the black-colored medicine into Su Jingyu's mouth in one shot.

However, the medicine's taste was truly too bitter. Even though Su Jingyu was in an unconscious state, he still instinctively resisted.

Madam Su became extremely anxious, afraid that the black-clothed person would blame her. However, when she turned around to look again, she discovered that the black-clothed person had unexpectedly disappeared into thin air.

Like this.....could she stop feeding it to him?

Just at this moment, the noisy sound of footsteps could be heard coming from the doorway.

When Madam Su heard it, her complexion immediately turned pale.

Seeing that there was still more than half a bowl of black-colored medicine left, and that the room simply did not have a place to dump the medicine, immediately, Madam Su became very anxious.

"Jingyu, quick, quickly finish drinking all of this!" if it was other people, then fine, but Apothecary Leng was also following behind, wouldn't he see through it

at a single glance?

Madam Su was so anxious that her hands started to tremble. The pitch-black liquid medicine flowed along the corner of Su Jingyu's mouth and dropped downwards.

Madam Su was wiping Su Jingyu's mouth with one hand while the other hand hurriedly fed him the medicine.

In the end, hearing that the footsteps were about to come in, and that there were still two mouthfuls of medicine left in the bowl.....Madam Su's heart hardened and directly poured it down her own mouth.

The moment Su Zian entered, he just so happened to see Madam Su raise her head to drink something. He couldn't help but feel it was strange and asked: "Madam, what are you drinking?"

"Oh—no, nothing!" Madam Su swallowed that black-colored medicine with great difficulty, and hid the medicine bottle carefully.

Only at this moment did Madam Su suddenly recall!

Actually, from the start, she could have poured the medicine into the bottle and hide it together, so she would not be braving a huge risk by drinking it herself!

When she thought of this, Madam Su wished she could hit her own head.

"Madam, in the end, what is wrong with you?" Su Zian felt that the Madam Su right now was extremely strange.

"No-nothing!" Madam Su spread out her hands, hinting that there were no problems.

Su Zian sent her a suspicious glance, then turned around to look at Su Jingyu with concern.

1) long nights with many dreams is the direct translation.. Basically it's an eloquent way of saying it's taking forever.

Chapter 666 – High Grade Celestial Spirit Water (7)

When he saw Su Jingyu's appearance start to darken, he suddenly had a very bad premonition.

Sure enough, in the next moment, Su Jingyu's entire body actually started to shudder and convulse. His veins stuck out as if about to explode, seeming very malevolent.

Su Zian was so anxious that he shouted out loud: "Apothecary Leng, Apothecary Leng, in the end, what is going on? What is wrong with Jingyu?"

Apothecary Leng walked forward a few steps and started to feel Su Jingyu's pulse.

At this time, Madman Su's complexion became pale, she was unable to suppress her entire body from trembling.

Her heart ached and she was also scared, she simply dared not continue to watch.

Her tears flowed violently. Other people would only say that she loved her son with a pure heart, so they did not think in any other direction.

Speaking of Apothecary Leng, now, his forehead was wrinkled into the character "川". His gaze had ignited into a raging flame.

He abruptly turned his head, in a rage, he glared at Madam Su: "In the end, what did you feed him?"

A trace of astonishment flashed through Madam Su's heart. She didn't know how much Apothecary Leng could see through.

As a result, Madman Su could only continuously shake her head, retreating

backwards. She kept crying until she could not say a single word.

Su Zian was sensitive enough to perceive the fishiness of the situation. He frowned and stared at Madam Su: “In the end, what is going on? Could it be that you really fed Jingyu something?”

“It’s Mighty Soul Grass!” Apothecary Leng approached Su Jingyu’s mouth, slightly sniffed it a bit, and firmly said: “This is precisely Mighty Soul Grass, no mistake!”

Su Zian’s entire face was full of doubt and also carried nervousness: “This Mighty Soul Grass.....what is it actually?”

Apothecary Leng did not feel like paying him any attention and directly snorted. He pointed to Madam Su and said: “Ask her!”

Madam Su’s back was now pressed against the wall, she had nowhere else to retreat.

Su Zian walked in front of her with two to three steps, and very fiercely glared at her: “Quickly speak! In the end, what kind of stuff is Mighty Soul Grass, why did you feed it to Jingyu! WHY?!”

Apothecary Leng being angered to this point, was sufficient to illustrate the seriousness of the situation.

However now, Madam Su was feeling guilty, fear and dread.....all kinds of feelings washed over her. Her mind changed and became stupid because of these emotions.

“I don’t know.....don’t know.....” Madman Su’s tears kept dropping down.

Apothecary Leng snorted several times: “If you won’t say it, then I will say it for you. This Mighty Soul Grass, its most terrible effect is on the cartilage! Especially if it’s the body of a person in poor health, after eating Mighty Soul Grass, the entire body’s bones will soften. If he ever wants to stand again, it’s already impossible!”

“No— —this is not true, this is not true!” Madam Su was frightened to a stop by Apothecary Leng’s words.

She lost her head out of fear and threw herself to kneel in front of Apothecary

Leng: "It's not, it should not be like this. She said this poison is not fatal....."

What Madam Su inadvertently blurted out, she, herself, was still not aware of it.

Su Zian heard it clearly. He advanced forward with a huge step and grabbed onto Madman Su's back collar in one move. His pair of eyes were so enraged that they nearly shot out flames: "She said this poison is not fatal? Who is she? Quickly speak!"

"I.....I....." Madam Su dared not say.

Jade Lake's fairy's background was so huge, if she was to confess, at that time, it would not only be Jingyu, even Xi'er would be.....

Only now did Madman Su truly understand the meaning of staying with a tiger to seek its skin. And understood the meaning of getting on a boat is easy, but getting off is hard.

"SPEAK!!!!" Su Zian's fingers were like steel pliers, pinching Madam Su's neck and lifting up her entire body, such that both her feet was lifted from the ground.

Chapter 667 – High Grade Celestial Spirit Water (8)

“WU WU WU——” Madam Su’s feet randomly moved, and her complexion swelled until it was red. Her neck was already twisted until it was broken by Su Zian.

“Will you speak or not! Say it or not! If you don’t say it, today, I will strangle you to death!”

“I——” Madam Su’s complexion swelled red, then, from scarlet red, it turned into purple, as if in the next second, she would stop breathing.

Just at this moment.

Suddenly, something rolled out from Madam Su’s sleeves

Apothecary Leng picked it up, looked at it, and snorted a few times: “The medicinal bottle for Mighty Soul Grass! Things have already reached this point and you still refuse to admit it!”

Su Zian saw that the evidence was conclusive. He was fuming with rage, his appearance had twisted malevolently and he seemed extremely frightening: “BITCH! YOU DARE KILL MY SON, I WILL KILL YOU! KILL YOU!”

Seeing Madam Su’s neck issuing a gurgling sound, as if it was about to be cut off, Su Luo stepped forward bravely.

She calmly pulled Su Zian’s arm to a halt: “Honorable Father, keep calm, Big Brother is Mother’s biological child, it’s impossible for her to harm Big Brother without cause or reason. Maybe Mother was set up and being framed by someone.”

Even Su Luo, who didn’t like Madam Su, had come out to mediate the quarrel.

The hot blood that had rushed up to Su Zian's head slowly went down, his emotional mood alleviated slightly.

With one fling, he shook off Madam Su, just like tossing out worn-out clothing, conveniently flinging it to the side.

However, his expression was still very fierce as he glared at Madam Su: "Quickly speak! In the end, who gave this medicine to you! Quickly speak!"

Su Zian simply could not imagine that this slut would actually poison Jingyu. He was her own biological child, also her only son!

Su Luo lightly glanced at Madam Su: "Honorable Mother, Apothecary Leng has been angered to this degree, if you do not give His Honorable Elder a satisfying answer, then Big Brother's illness will truly be incurable."

Su Luo's words, with regards to Madam Su, was the last life-saving straw.

Her eyes suddenly brightened, crawling on the floor, she then hugged Su Zian's legs and sobbed: "My lord, I was wrong, it was I who was blinded by stupid jealousy. If not, I would never have poisoned Jingyu like this."

"This Mighty Soul Grass, in the end, who gave it to you! Speak!" Su Zian angrily kicked her away.

Madam Su's chest was kicked and she immediately spit out two mouthfuls of blood.

Her head rose up with great difficulty, as she disjointedly said: "It was.....Jade Lake's fairy.....it was her who gave me.....the poison....."

"The Jade Lake's fairy!"

When these words came out, the entire room immediately became quiet and silent.

"How could this be....." Su Zian's cheeks twitched: "Wasn't Jingyu beaten up by the Jade Lake's Li family? You idiot, to actually cooperate with them to poison Jingyu? How could there actually be a mother like you under the heavens? Cheap woman! Why don't you just go die!"

The more Su Zian thought, the angrier he became. He sent another heavy kick towards Madam Su again.

Madam Su's ribcage produced a loud and clear fracturing sound, hearing it would make a person's blood run cold.

Madam Su's tears and mucus tumbled down together.

As matters stood, what good was there in concealing things?

Madam Su might as well just reveal everything, and told them the whole truth: "Actually.....actually, in the beginning, Jingyu did not receive heavy injuries. He, he only received some superficial bruises, and then ate some medicinal pills to pretend to be seriously injured....."

"You——" Su Zian only felt his temples slowly throb with pain!

Su Zian cast his gaze towards Apothecary Leng, and Apothecary Leng nodded his head: "It was indeed so, therefore, at that time, this Apothecary only gave you a few recovery pills."

But, at that time, Your Honorable Elder didn't explain the situation clearly! Su Zian's heart was very twitchy, inevitably, he wanted to blame Apothecary Leng. But, on the surface, he did not dare to show the slightest bit of disrespect towards Apothecary Leng.

Chapter 668 – High Grade Celestial Spirit Water (9)

“Then what about last night? Don’t tell me that poison.....” Su Zian’s complexion became gloomy and frightening.

“Last night.....Last night, the Jade Lake’s fairy personally came, saying that the Gigantic Eight-legged Scorpion’s poison was not difficult to cure. As long as Su Manor tied up Su Luo, that loathsome girl, and delivered her to the Jade Lake’s Li family, they naturally would deliver the Celestial Spirit Water. At that time, Jingyu would have no problems.....” Madam Su told the truth.

Right now, Su Zian was leaning on one side with an indeterminate mood, enigmatically. No one could possibly understand what he was thinking.

Su Luo looked at Madam Su, a cynical expression flashing through her eyes. But her face only looked like a person who had been wronged: “Honorable Mother, you really hate me this much? In order for you to be rid of me, this thorn on your side, this thorn in your flesh, you didn’t even hesitate to gamble with Big Brother’s life.....Honorable Mother, don’t tell me that in your heart, killing me is more important than Big Brother’s life?”

Su Zian, with one hand, lifted up Madam Su: “Don’t spout rubbish! Clearly, all of this is an evil scheme set up by you, stop falsely accusing others!”

The Jade Lake’s Li family.....Su Zian knew that he could not afford to offend them. As a result, this black pot could only be shouldered by Madam Su.

But, Madam Su hadn’t realized Su Zian’s thoughts. She anxiously shouted loudly: “It really is the Jade Lake’s fairy, it really is her! Last night, it was her, just a moment ago, it was also her! She held the Mighty Soul Grass and One Shot Silencer for me to choose! I really had no choice!

Apothecary Leng coldly smiled: “The Great General Su, your wife poisoned your son, and time after time, you came to invite this apothecary to treat the illness. Are you deliberately making sport of this apothecary?”

Su Zian, being mocked and ridiculed by Apothecary Leng like this, immediately, his heart was greatly alarmed. Soon after, a burst of fear attacked his thoughts.

That’s right, from Apothecary Leng’s point of view, this was deliberately being bothersome to him...

Before he finished speaking, Apothecary Leng flung his sleeves and walked away!

“Apothecary Leng, don’t be angry, you.....” Su Zian hurriedly chased after him with large strides.

This.....What do you call this situation? With great difficulty, a relationship with Apothecary Leng was established through Su Xi. But, who would have known that cheap woman would go mad, and do this kind of thing. He wished he could choke her to death.

Apothecary Leng was clearly extremely angry, his strides were large and also very fast. Su Zian hurriedly chased after him, and with great difficulty, finally caught up. However, Apothecary Leng angrily flung him away.

“Xi’er, quick, quickly go and apologize to Apothecary Leng!” Now, as things stood, the only one who could save Jingyu was this honorable elder! Su Zian was so anxious that his entire head and face were full of sweat.

“Oh!” In fact, Su Xi was there all along, only, there was no sense of her existence there.

At this moment, being called out by Su Zian, even though her heart was somewhat at a loss, she still chased after Apothecary Leng, full of confidence.

Apothecary Leng treated her differently, he was unlikely to reject her, right? Su Xi’s heart thought like this.

Momentarily, the people inside the room had emptied out, there was only Su Luo left who could stand.

Su Jingyu laid on the bed half-dead, spitting out blood non-stop and

continuously twitching, appearing to be extremely sinister.

The poison in Madam Su's body had also begun to take effect. She suddenly thrashed, after a short interval, she thrashed again.

Because she was heavily kicked several times by Su Zian before, Madam Su was already close to dying. Adding in the poison that was breaking out, now, her entire person cut an extremely sorry figure.

Seeing her cutting such a sorry figure and fallen to the floor in disarray, Su Luo squatted down and was all smiles as she looked at Madam Su.

Madam Su very fiercely glared at Su Luo.

At this moment, the smile of victory at the corner of Su Luo's mouth was just the opposite of Madam Su's shameful performance, making her extremely angry.

Su Luo leaned close to Madam Su's ear, in a low voice, she said a sentence: Actually, the black-clothed person just now, was me.

Chapter 669 – At the time when leaving (1)

Su Luo stood up and tidied her dress, only after this did she leave. Before leaving, she instructed the servants: “Madam Su had been kicked by the master, and her injuries are very serious. This Miss will go invite Apothecary Leng.”

At the moment, Madam Su was provoked by Su Luo’s words, but her entire body was already unable to move, she was even unable to speak.

Her two eyes became perfectly round as she rigidly glared at Su Luo. Her eyes were filled with hatred.

However, Su Luo merely smiled indifferently, apathetically glanced at Madam Su and Su Jingyu, then turned and left without any reluctance.

This matter, she didn’t regret one bit of it.

If someone was to be blamed, then blame Madam Su and Su Jingyu, who were fine until they insisted on thinking of this plan against her.

From the start, Su Jingyu pretended to have been seriously injured. It was to the degree that Su Zian nearly tied her up to send her to beg the Jade Lake’s fairy.

Apothecary Leng’s appearance completely destroyed their plans. Furthermore, after one plan had failed, they hatched another plan. And that was to feed Su Jingyu poison, while only the Jade Lake’s Li family had the antidote. As a result, Su Zian would still tie Su Luo up to go and beg for forgiveness from the Jade Lake’s fairy.

However, nobody had expected that at the last moment, Su Luo was able to bring out a bottle of Celestial Spirit Water. In addition, it was even High Grade Celestial Spirit Water, and the medicine’s efficiency was extremely good. Thus, the Jade Lake’s fairy and Madam Su’s plans failed miserably again.

But, how could Su Luo let herself suffer a loss in vain? This entire matter was already within her own plans.

Thus, Su Luo disguised herself as the black-clothed person. Because her mouth was covered by black cloth and Su Luo could meticulously imitate the Jade Lake's fairy's tone of voice, as a result, Madam Su was unable to recognize that it was her.

Also, as a result, Su Luo was able to successfully frame the Jade Lake's fairy as the criminal who poisoned them.

Because before, that time, it really was the Jade Lake's fairy who had poisoned Su Jingyu. As a result, it's as if the Jade Lake's fairy had poured yellow mud on the crotch of her trousers, even if it's not shit, it's still shit. She could only accept this accusation.

Not only was this able to make Su Jingyu lay paralyzed in bed, but it also made Su Zian reject Madam Su. In the end, it also successfully framed the Jade Lake's fairy. Su Luo called this gaining three advantages in one move.

From her perspective, Madam Su was already no longer a threat, and Su Jingyu had also become a cripple.

Looking at this huge Su Manor, penetrated by a cold and cheerless atmosphere, the corner of Su Luo's mouth curved into a bitter smile.

She had no intention of harming anyone. But in the end, due to all these people in Su Manor moving against her, they had dug their own graves, truly very amusing.

First it was Su Wan, then Su Qing, now it was Su Jingyu and Madam Su..... hopefully Su Xi and Su Zian would be able to recognize reality, and won't come to frame her again, otherwise.....

The corner of Su Luo's mouth lifted into a faint smile, her figure quickly disappearing from the place where she stood.

Leng Manor.

Outside, at the gates of Leng Manor.

Apothecary Leng had angrily flung his sleeves and returned to his manor. Leng

Manor's gate closed heavily with a 'BANG' sound.

The door shut out Su Xi and Su Zian who were right behind, chasing after him.

The steward guarded the gate and angrily glared at them: "A good dog does not obstruct the road, quickly leave, leave! Leng Manor does not welcome you!"

His master rarely dropped his prestige to go and give these influential families examinations. Who would have known that they would be this indiscriminating. They actually dared to make a fool out of their master, truly too hateful!

The steward closed the door with a loud 'bang' sound, locking Su Zian and Su Xi outside the gate.

Su Zian became extremely anxious.

With one hand, he pressed down Su Xi's head: "Kneel down, quickly kneel down and admit our mistake to Apothecary Leng! Quickly!"

He hoped that Apothecary Leng would reconsider on Su Xi's behalf to be lenient and properly treat Jingyu's illness. Otherwise his son would truly be wasted!

Su Xi was heavily pressed down to the ground, because of the violent force, her knees immediately gave a burst of intense pain.

"Daddy....." Su Xi tasted pain, her eye sockets were full of tears.

Chapter 670 – At the time when leaving (2)

However, Su Zian's face was expressionless: "Now, the lives of your mother and your brother are in your hands. If you are able to ask Apothecary Leng to come back, they will be fine. If you can't invite him back, then they're finished!"

Su Xi was scared silly.

"Daddy, actually, Apothecary Leng didn't give your daughter any preferential treatment..." Su Xi wanted to explain. Su Zian, however, shot her a harsh sideways glance, scaring her into silence.

"Xi'er! Now isn't the time to shirk responsibility. You should think about your brother and your mother." Su Zian rubbed her head, "If you plead here properly, with Apothecary Leng treating you so well, his heart will definitely soften."

"But Daddy... Apothecary Leng simply doesn't treat me-ah..." Su Xi felt like crying but lacked the tears. She did not even know what was going on. Why was everyone so sure that Apothecary Leng really liked her?

"Su Xi, if you're like this, Daddy will be very disappointed." Su Zian looked at Su Xi seriously.

Fine... Su Xi agreed tacitly.

"Then what about you, Daddy?" Full of expectations, Su Xi raised her head to look at him.

"Daddy will go to the imperial palace and ask His Majesty for an imperial decree," Su Zian said and hurriedly left.

Inside the room.

Apothecary Leng was sitting indoors. In front of him, there was a small, dark red coffee table. On the table, there was a small, red clay stove, and on it, there was a pot of tea simmering. When the water reached the boiling point, it let out

a bubbling sound.

When having tea, naturally, there would be someone to keep you company.

At this time, there was a person seated opposite of Apothecary Leng.

This person was none other than Su Luo.

It was only after washing the cup with the first pot of tea, did Apothecary Leng then set a new cup of perfectly steeped tea before Su Luo (1). Unhurriedly, he said, "This is Heart Cleansing Tea. Try some."

"Heart Cleansing Tea?" Su Luo sipped a mouthful and suddenly, a sense of enjoyment and satisfaction appeared on her face.

Just drinking one mouthful, and Su Luo already had a kind of faintly discernible feeling of being high up in the clouds. She felt a warmth slowly circulating from her abdominal area to her entire body. This feeling was extremely wonderful.

"This tea?" There was something strange about it.

Apothecary Leng gave a satisfied smile, "A person who drinks Heart Cleansing Tea for the first time, more or less, will have their spiritual strength upgraded a bit. Now, how do you feel?"

"Like I'm about to break through to the fifth rank soon." Su Luo could feel the spiritual force circulating slowly inside her body, seemingly trying to break through, as if seeking for a way out.

"If you can break through to the fifth rank, then you haven't wasted this old man's Heart Cleansing Tea that was collected over many years and given to you." Apothecary Leng smiled mysteriously.

On top of Su Luo's forehead was a large question mark: "What's the benefit in breaking through to the fifth rank?"

"At least you now have the minimum qualifications to enter the selection."

"What qualifications to enter the selection?" Su Luo curiously opened her eyes wide.

"The mysteries of heaven must not be revealed..." Apothecary Leng stroked his chin, "However, your ability to refine drugs is still at the Elementary level. This is

not particularly good.”

Su Luo looked at Apothecary Leng with a face full of suspicion. She always had this feeling of being about to be sold off by the person in front of her.

“Take out the pills you refined for this old man to have a look.” Apothecary Leng was touching his beard, “Even though you are only an Elementary Apothecary, if the effects of the immortality drugs you refine are good, then it’s not like you won’t have a chance. After all, it’s only been half a year since you’ve entered the threshold of Apothecary studies.”

“What chance? Apothecary Leng, if you have something to say, then just say it. Don’t drag it out any longer.” Su Luo looked at him, full of expectations.

“The time still hasn’t arrived yet. You should wait patiently. Anyhow, it won’t be bad news.” No matter what, Apothecary Leng was unwilling to reveal even half of a sentence.

Since she was unable to draw out an answer by asking, Su Luo also obediently stopped asking.

From her sleeves, she took out the Spirit Restoration Pills she refined and passed it over to Apothecary Leng: “These are all the ones I refined recently. Please have a look.”

The moment Apothecary Leng saw the milky-white pills, his expression paused slightly. He took the pills and checked them carefully. He sniffed them and, in the end, even sampled a little of it.

One could only see his face had an expression of amazement: “These aren’t Elementary Spirit Restoration Pills!”

1) Serving Tea: Traditionally Chinese people would put tea in pot then added boiling water... This first pot is then pour out, often used to rinse the tea cup. Then more hot water is added to the tea and this would be allowed to seep before serving.

Chapter 671 – At the time when leaving (3)

Su Luo spread out her hands: “The ones I refined were all like this. Does Apothecary Leng think this is strange?” Before, Su Luo thought the Spirit Restoration Pills she refined had good results. The Elementary Spirit Restoration Pills had the effects of an Intermediate level Spirit Restoration Pills.

“You, this girl...” Apothecary Leng serious gaze sized up Su Luo, “You’re certain these were all refined by you?”

“Absolutely true, cheating neither the old nor young. Guaranteed it’s authentic!” Su Luo’s face was full of certainty.

“But this pill, it... it’s Intermediate level Spirit Restoration Pill. Oh, no. It’s slightly better than an Intermediate level Spirit Restoration Pill.” Incomparably shocked, Apothecary Leng stared at Su Luo, “You, this girl, is really hidden deeply and not revealing anything, right? Come, come, come follow this old man to the refining room. You will personally refine it for this old man to see.”

“Alright, if you want me to refine it in person, then I’ll refine the pills in person. In any case, I don’t have a problem,” Su Luo said it very confidently.

Apothecary Leng brought Su Luo to the refining room. Only after seeing Su Luo actually refined an Intermediate level Spirit Restoration pill in front of him did he believe it.

“Apothecary Leng, how is it?” Su Luo smilingly asked.

“Since you now have this kind of strength, there are some things I can say for you to hear.” Apothecary Leng brought Su Luo to sit back at their original positions.

Seeing Su Luo’s face full of puzzlement and curiosity, Apothecary Leng gave a slight sigh. “Have you heard of Grandmaster Rong Yun?”

Grandmaster Rong Yun? Su Luo shook her head: “Never heard of him.”

Veins suddenly appeared on Apothecary Leng’s forehead: “You are also an Apothecary now, yet you’ve never heard of Grandmaster Rong Yun? Which school of refining drugs are you learning from?!”

Confronted with Apothecary Leng’s furious criticism, Su Luo’s neck shrank back and she weakly asked: “Is he really famous?”

“Why stop at famous? Grandmaster Rong Yun is currently the only Grand Master level Apothecary on the continent! Do you know how many aristocratic and prestigious families want to entice him to join but cannot? Do you know how many experts want to seek a meeting with him but cannot? Let me tell you like this. As long as you’re able pay respects to him as a teacher, being under his name, in the future, you’ll be able to walk across this continent however you want!” Apothecary Leng slapped the table as he came to a conclusion.

“So powerful? Then, did he accept any disciples before?” Su Luo asked suspiciously.

“He had.” A hint of embarrassment flashed across Apothecary Leng’s expression, “That unworthy disciple is this old man.”

“What? Grandmaster Rong Yun is your teacher?” Su Luo was really startled this time.

No wonder, no wonder back then, even revealing His Highness Prince Jin’s title was still unable to move Apothecary Leng.

Apothecary Leng grabbed at his hair in annoyance: “Unfortunately, this old man is slow-witted and has bad aptitude. I could not completely carry on my teacher’s legacy. Therefore, my teacher decided to once more accept a personal disciple.”

“Grandmaster Rong Yun wants to accept a disciple. Why haven’t I ever heard of this before?”

Apothecary Leng slanted a harsh glance at Su Luo: “You haven’t even heard of Grandmaster Rong Yun, how could you have heard of him accepting disciples?”

Su Luo stuck out her tongue. What he said was reasonable.

Apothecary Leng let out a sigh. “Actually, three years ago, my teacher had already mentioned this before. The Jade Lake’s Li family set their heart on it the most. For this, they had prepared for a full three years.”

“Jade Lake’s Li family?”

“You also know that person and are quite familiar with her. She is Li Yaoyao,” Apothecary Leng mumbled.

“Li Yaoyao, she is also an Apothecary?” Su Luo asked in surprise.

“Yes, she is an Apothecary. In order to become my teacher’s personal disciple, these few years, Li Yaoyao truly worked hard. She had already been promoted to Intermediate Apothecary. She has also followed by teacher’s side for about half a year.” Apothecary Leng said with a sigh, “Teacher’s temper is extremely cold. He won’t easily let people get close to him.”

Chapter 672 – At the time when leaving (4)

Apothecary Leng took a glance at Su Luo and said mildly, “Seeing as he let Li Yaoyao stay by his side for half a year, it’s clear that my teacher thinks extremely highly of her. This selection of a disciple will most likely be her.”

Su Luo’s eyes narrowed slightly.

Li Yaoyao had the Jade Lake’s Li family at her back and was already this headstrong and impudent. If she was allowed to pay respects to Grandmaster Rong Yun as her teacher, then when the time came... Su Luo bit her lower lip, a myriad of thoughts running through her mind.

Evidently, Apothecary Leng was not very fond of Li Yaoyao. He scoffed twice, “Emperor Jing’s words have no effect on His Highness Prince Jin, but if Grandmaster Rong Yun was to issue some words for His Highness Prince Jin to marry Li Yaoyao, at that time, if His Highness Prince Jin does not agree... You’re too young, so you don’t know just how many people in this world owe a debt to my teacher.”

Moreover, those who do owe Grandmaster Rong Yun a favour, every single one of them was an elite expert in the present era. Just by stamping his feet, he could affect the region’s most important person. These words, Apothecary Leng did not say.

Originally, Su Luo had even thought that the matter of Grandmaster Rong Yun accepting a disciple had nothing to do with her. That she was merely a spectator listening to a story.

But now, hearing Apothecary Leng’s words, if Li Yaoyao really was selected, then Su Luo herself would no longer have a place to stand on this continent. Then, this will become a serious issue.

However, Su Luo, the skin between her eyebrows creased. Apothecary Leng’s

persistence in swaying her to become Grandmaster Rong Yun's disciple, what side was he on?

Su Luo raised her eyebrows with a smile yet not a smile: "Apothecary Leng, you are so insistent on me going to seek him as my teacher?"

"This old man just doesn't like that Li family's girl, that's all." Apothecary Leng turned his face away.

"You think I'll be selected?" Su Luo asked seriously.

Apothecary Leng shook his head and told her the truth directly, "The chance of that girl from Li family getting selected surpasses ninety percent. Whereas for you, the odds aren't even ten percent for you to succeed."

Su Luo stared at him resentfully: "Then you still tell me to go seek him as my teacher, isn't this just intentionally sending me to be cannon fodder? Or am I going to be cannon fodder for Li Yaoyao."

"However, nothing in the world is absolute, without reaching the last moment, no one will know the result." Apothecary Leng smiled as he looked at Su Luo, "Right now, almost everyone is against you being with His Highness Prince Jin. But, if you become my teacher's disciple, what do those people count as?"

She could not help but say that Apothecary Leng's last sentence had an extremely enticing ability.

Su Luo thought of Nangong Liuyun. She thought of all the effort and sacrifices he had made for the sake of their relationship. But all this time, she had always been passively receiving and never took the initiative to do anything for him.

Now, it was time for her to put in some effort.

"Alright, I promise you." A wave of unwavering determination flashed across Su Luo's face, "I just don't believe that, with my innate skill of being able to refine Intermediate Spirit Restoration Pills as an Elementary Apothecary, I will lose to Li Yaoyao. She, who is only kind on the surface, but is a malicious and pretentious woman."

Having heard that, a hint of a smile quickly flashed through Apothecary Leng's eyes.

The two of them had talked for so long, even the tea had already cooled.

At this time, the scorching sun was in the sky. Alone, Su Xi was kneeling upright with her back straight in the courtyard.

With great difficulty, Su Xi managed to pull aside a passing servant. She wanted him to pass on a message to Apothecary Leng, but without even glancing at her, the servant walked away haughtily.

Su Xi was thoroughly depressed.

Just at this moment, Su Zian returned looking twitchy. He saw Su Xi still kneeling as before and could not help but feel somewhat angry: “Why are you still kneeling?”

The sun high in the sky was scorching. Su Xi was dizzy and faint from being in the sun. When she raised her head and saw Su Zian, she suddenly became happy, “Daddy——”

Daddy said he was going to request an imperial edict. He was gone for so long, he must have gotten the imperial edict he requested, right?

Confronted with Su Xi’s gaze that was full of expectations, a trace of embarrassment flashed across Su Zian’s eyes.

Chapter 673 – At the time when leaving (5)

He did indeed go to request an imperial decree. Originally, he had wanted to use a soft method with a hard method simultaneously. If the soft one did not work, then he would use the hard one.

However, he had just spoken and was immediately met with His Majesty's refusal.

His Majesty's expression at that time was terrible. He just said one sentence, this emperor has no control over Apothecary Leng.

Just one sentence, and he annihilated Su Zian's hopes.

Because of Emperor Jing's position, he knew Apothecary Leng's background. He knew he had studied under Grandmaster Rong Yun. So, even though His Majesty's station was highly honored, he still did not dare to suppress Apothecary Leng with an imperial decree.

But with Su Zian's rank, he was not qualified to know these classified details.

Now, being mentioned by Su Xi, Su Zian glared at her in annoyance and forcefully changed the subject: "Apothecary Leng hasn't sent anyone out to see you?"

"He hasn't." Su Xi grumbled, feeling aggrieved.

Wasn't it said that Apothecary Leng treated her very well? She just could not see it. From the start, Apothecary Leng had not even seen her directly with his eyes.

"Kneel again!" Compared to Su Xi, Su Zian had complete faith in it. He coldly said: "You will keep kneeling here. If you can't invite Apothecary Leng to come, then don't return to the manor!"

Even now, Apothecary Leng had not come out. He was probably testing this

girl's perseverance. He absolutely could not fail through the lack of a final effort.

After making it clear, Su Zian tossed his sleeves and left.

"Daddy..." Seeing Su Zian leaving without even looking back, Su Xi became so depressed that she wanted to hit her head against the wall.

Until exactly when would she have to kneel here...

From the elegant room on the second floor, that just so happened to have a view of Su Xi kneeling in the courtyard.

The corner of Su Luo's mouth raised into a hint of a curve: "Fortunately, Apothecary Leng did not say my given name and only said the surname. Otherwise, the person kneeling there right now would be me."

Apothecary Leng's mouth slanted sideways a little: "You, this girl, knows how to kneel?"

She dared to kneel, he wouldn't bear to accept it.

Seeing Su Luo smile yet remain silent, Apothecary Leng thought for a moment. Suddenly, a line, as if written by a god, came to him, "In fact, His Highness Prince Jin needs to go into seclusion to cultivate. You've encumbered him."

"I've encumbered him?" As expected, Su Luo's attention was instantly attracted by this. She asked in surprise: "What happened to him?"

Apothecary Leng shook his head and said faintly: "In the past half year, his promotion to the next realm is too fast. Yet, he's had no time to properly stabilize it. This caused his foundation to be unstable. If he still won't go into seclusion to cultivate and harmonize everything, there might be effects that are big or small on his future. "

Su Luo was slightly startled to a pause.

Since Apothecary Leng was able to see through it, then how could Nangong Liuyun not be aware of it himself?

However, he acted so normal that even she was kept in the dark.

If Apothecary Leng had not brought it up today, she would still have been kept in the dark, not knowing anything at all.

“How long would he have to stay in seclusion?” Su Luo’s voice was very low, carrying a sense of loss.

“On the low end, half a year, high end would be three years.” In a slight joking manner, Apothecary Leng cast a quick glance at Su Luo.

“So long...” Su Luo looked towards the azure sky, murmuring to herself.

If it was before, Nangong Liuyun would definitely choose to go into seclusion without the slightest hesitation. But this half a year, because of her appearance, therefore, he remained in the imperial capital to assist her.

Moreover now, there was also the Jade Lake’s Li family, glaring like a tiger watching his prey. Even more so, at this time, he would not go into seclusion and abandon her to face them alone.

But if it’s like this, the damage to his future would be enormous.

With such extraordinary gifts like his, his future accomplishments were limitless. However, he still decided to stay by her side.

If she had not known, then it would be dismissable. Now that she knew, if she still stayed indifferent, then that’s simply being too selfish and too disgraceful!

“I’m leaving first!” Su Luo was no longer in the mood to watch the play.

Chapter 674 – At the time when leaving (6)

When Su Luo returned to Su Manor, the sky's colour had already turned dark. At this time, Su Xi was still kneeling over there, it would be a good guess that she will not be returning tonight.

Lu Luo, in high spirits, walked up to wait upon Su Luo.

Su Luo, seeing that she was all smiles as if from lots of happy news, couldn't help but to ask curiously: "What happened to make you this happy?"

"Miss, now outside, this was spread everywhere. They are all saying that the Jade Lake's fairy, in order to force you to submit, did not hesitate to even poison the Madam! Outside, it is being spread as if it has grown a nose and eyes. As if everyone had seen it with their own eyes." Lu Luo was very happy.

The corner of Su Luo's mouth hooked into an indifferent cold smile.

After Li Yaoyao had done such things and still wanted to escape unscathed? How could it be possible?

Even if she had the Jade Lake's Li family backing, so what? Everyone must be responsible for the things they do themselves.

Now, this had only happened in Su Manor today, and in a blink of an eye, it had spread all over the streets. Everywhere was abuzz, who was controlling this behind the scenes? The first person Su Luo thought of was Nangong Liuyun.

Middle of the night.

The night was pitch-black like ink.

Su Luo's petite body was absorbed by the darkness, her figure was nimble and fast, dashing towards the direction of Prince Jin's Royal Manor.

Not a single guard in Su Manor noticed that Su Luo had already taken off.

A great number of guards surrounded Prince Jin's Royal Manor, but all of them recognized Su Luo, therefore, no one stopped her.

Su Luo entered Prince Jin's Royal Manor unimpeded and unhindered.

She stopped the steward to ask, and found out that Nangong Liuyun was in the bathhouse.

Su Luo didn't go in and merely sat in his sleeping palace quarters to wait.

Not long after, Nangong Liuyun walked out dressed in a white night robe.

At this moment, his black as ink hair was draped loosely behind his head. His ivory-like skin, after bathing, shone with the luster of gems. He looked extremely enticing, simply a feast for the eyes.

Without waiting for Su Luo to react, Nangong Liuyun's long sleeves swept up. When she looked again, she was already sitting on Nangong Liuyun's lap.

Seeing Su Luo, Nangong Liuyun was clearly in a very good mood. His handsome face that would not smile or speak casually with others was full of smiles.

Those deep eyes that were glossy and shining from being moistened by the mist of the hot spring, now, were motionless as they stared fixedly at Su Luo. Those enchanting, cinnabar-colored lips hooked into a devilishly charming and roguishly enchanting smile: "This king was just about to go look for you and you just voluntarily delivered yourself to my door. You and this king's heart must really be linked."

Su Luo softly caressed his face, then tapped his nose: "You want to steal into a woman's room at night?"

"Now, it's reversed with you sneaking in, this king will reluctantly accept the invitation." Nangong Liuyun's warm arms carried Su Luo and headed directly towards the large bed.

Being tossed upon the large bed, Su Luo was in the posture of facing upwards, looking at Nangong Liuyun.

This bastard's skin was indeed so beautiful as to be otherworldly.

On that matchless handsome face, there was a pair of black as ink eyes that was as deep as the ocean. It gave many people the feeling that it would lure

them to sacrifice their life and breath. It was so deep that it could suck Su Luo's entire person inside.

His mouth hooked into a devastatingly charming smile, that smile made Su Luo's heart beat wildly with ba-thump sounds.

"Don't come over." Realizing he was about to do what he wanted, Su Luo rolled away and wanted to jump up.

But now, Nangong Liuyun had already pounced towards her like a hungry wolf.

Consequently, Su Luo's nose very unfortunately bumped into his chest, sending out a violent sound of collision.

Nangong Liuyun gave voice to a stifled laugh, and with one roll, he lied on his back on the bed. Whereas Su Luo was now lying on her stomach on top of his chest.

Su Luo covered her nose, unhappily glaring at Nangong Liuyun: "How boorish!"

Nangong Liuyun stifled a laugh, with a bitter smile, helped her to massage her nose. That attitude was like coaxing a child: "Yes, yes, this king is wrong, next time, I promise to be as gentle as water."

Chapter 675-At the time when leaving (7)

There was still a next time? Su Luo shot him a glare then pulled him up to sit properly: "I have something to ask you. Please be serious and vow to answer what I ask."

Nangong Liyun forced a laugh as he touched his nose: "Okay, what do you want to ask?"

Su Luo carefully swept around his body once, then finally gazed directly into his eyes. With one hand against his chest, her complexion was unprecedentedly serious: "Nangong Liuyun, tell me the truth. During this half year, did you get promoted too quickly and that's why your state is unstable?"

Before her words had dissipated, Su Luo could feel his heart suddenly jump, although his complexion stayed the same.

Fortunately, she had already placed her palm against his chest.

Nangong Liuyun licked his lower lip. He wanted to say something, but he was beaten by the quick-footed Su Luo: "If you are thinking of an excuse, then don't bother saying it."

"You, this girl." Nangong held the hand she had placed on his chest and helplessly used his other hand to rub her head, "Who said such nonsense in front of you?"

"Whether or not it's nonsense, you understand it the most clearly." Su Luo's forehead knit, as she stared at him solemnly and seriously.

Her overbearing attitude finally got Nangong Liyun to raise his hands in surrender.

Because he knew, she was serious.

"It's Leng Yan, that charlatan, again!" Nangong Liuyun groaned gloomily with

resentment flitting quickly through his eyes. These flashes of resentment were naturally directed at Apothecary Leng.

Regarding Nangong Liuyun being able to instantaneously guess it was Apothecary Leng, Su Luo didn't feel it was strange. Because these few days, the person she had been in contact with the most was Apothecary Leng.

"Whether or not it was Apothecary Leng, who said it isn't important. The important thing is, Nangong Liuyun, you must go into seclusion to cultivate. Furthermore, this matter must be done immediately!" Su Luo looked at him with a deadly earnest expression, not giving him a choice.

"It's not urgent." The corner of Nangong Liuyun's mouth rose into a demonically charming smile.

"It really follows the saying the Emperor is not worried but the eunuch is." Su Luo scoffed twice, "Can you show a little bit of care for your own body, please?"

Nangong Liuyun merely smiled but did not promise her.

Su Luo helplessly heaved a sigh: "I know you're worried about me. You're afraid that after you leave, there'll be no one to protect me, and that the Li family will secretly send a killer after me, right?"

Nangong Liuyun remained silent as before, though his very black, sharp eyebrows knotted slightly.

His Highness Prince Jin, who was arrogant and aloof, had probably never been placed in this kind of awkward position before, right?

Su Luo's fair fingers gently caressed his forehead, smoothing out his wrinkled brows. Looking at him, she said seriously, "Do you still remember the previous time of betting with Li Aoqiong on crystal stones? That time, he lost and promised me that within one year, the Li family won't seek to kill me. "

"Moreover, Apothecary Leng also promised me, he will recommend me to Grandmaster Rong Yun. For all you know, when you come back, I will have already become Grandmaster Rong Yun's personal disciple."

"Apothecary Leng said, Grandmaster Rong Yun has a cold and eccentric temperament, hard for ordinary people to get close to. Only by becoming his

disciple, can I ask him to treat your illness.” Su Luo was always worried that during the full moon, Nangong would inevitably be visited by the disease in his leg.

Yet, Nangong Liuyun was resolute, “No, my sickness must be treated by you.”

“Willful.” Su Luo pinched his face in exasperation.

“I only want you to treat it.” Nangong Liuyun insisted childishly.

Su Luo was defeated quickly: “Okay, okay, I treat it, then I’ll treat it. But if it’s like this, I really have no choice but to pay respects to Grandmaster Rong Yun as his disciple. However, once I’ve paid respects to him as my teacher, the Jade Lake’s Li family won’t be able to threaten me anymore.”

“Uh.” Nangong Liuyun lightly snorted. Just thinking that the person protecting her would not be him, he felt his chest tighten, as if a large mountain was pressing down there.

Chapter 676 – Breaking through to advance a rank (1)

Su Luo felt his mood declining, and she rested her head on his shoulder. Her cheek was pressed against his chest that was beating vigorously and steadily, and she slowly said: “In addition, I am also very worried about you. If you don’t stabilize your state now, in the future, if you enter Recoil of Madness again, what’s to be done? If you don’t increase your cultivation speed now, when I am bullied by people in the future, what’s to be done when you are unable to avenge me?”

Su Luo used both the carrot-and-stick method while acting coquettishly, imploring. She used all kinds of reasoning simultaneously. When she said the last sentence, Nangong Liuyun finally wavered.

“Jade Lake’s Li family.....I will have a good talk with Li Yaoyao.” Nangong Liuyun said with pauses gently stroking Su Luo’s soft hair while she was in his embrace.

“Ok.” Su Luo nodded her head obediently.

“Grandmaster Rong Yun’s side.....I will hand it over to Leng Yan.” Nangong Liuyun tenderly rubbed the top of her head.

“Ok.” Su Luo, in his embrace, rubbed against him like a kitten.

“Father Emperor’s side, I will speak to him clearly.” The more Nangong Liuyun spoke, the more worried he was.

“Ok.” Su Luo tenderly nodded.

“If you have some problems, you can go seek Beichen.”

“Ok.”

This night, Nangong Liuyun unprecedentedly chatted away, doing something completely contrary to his identity as His Highness Prince Jin.

He chattered on endlessly, briefing Su Luo about countless large and small matters, as if she were a child who was completely unable take care of herself.

And Su Luo continuously listened obediently, agreeing obediently, until she sunk into swamp-like darkness.

Seeing her sleeping face, beautiful like the summer flowers, Nangong Liuyun was reluctant to blow out the bedside candle. He just continuously lay on his side, motionlessly gazing at her, with tenderness and softness in his eyes.

Actually, since his sect found out he had risen two ranks within half a year, they had already sent people to ask him to return. Recently, they were becoming impatient and were about to use force.

He originally wanted to take Su Luo away with him, but recalling Li Yaoyao getting special treatment from his two senior brothers, Nangong Liuyun hesitated. When the time came for him to shut the door for secluded cultivation, leaving Luo Luo behind, what would she do?

Rather than staying with him at an unfamiliar sect, it would be better for her to stay in the imperial capital. Moreover, with Grandmaster Rong Yun there, it truly was another hopeful path.

With Leng Yan as a protective charm, indeed, no one truly dared to do anything to her.

But, at the thought that he wouldn't be able to see her for a while, Nangong Liuyun felt a stifling panic in his chest.....

Without him by her side, didn't know whether or not little Luo Luo would be bullied by people, whether or not she would suffer grievances..... But Nangong Liuyun knew, an eagle's chick must learn to soar on its own, Su Luo needed experience to be honed and then grow strong.

Now, letting go was the best time.

Ultimately, Nangong Liuyun still left.

“Miss, His Highness Prince Jin is about to leave, won't you go to send him off?”

Lu Luo saw Su Luo once again holding that book《The Continent's History》and flipping through it. She was so anxious she directly stamped her feet.

Su Luo shook her head, her gaze remaining on the book.

“Miss, how can you be so calm and collected.” Lu Luo was even more anxious than Su Luo.

With His Highness Prince Jin gone, those bad characters would all again come running to create trouble. Who knows whether Miss would be able to hold on? Would the days once again return to the way they were before knowing His Highness Prince Jin?

Su Luo didn't even raise her head: “Your family's Miss still hasn't become so weak, you just relax one hundred percent of your heart.”

Su Luo didn't dare go send Nangong Liuyun off, because she feared she couldn't bear to part with him.

Now, being parted at this time would give her enough time to face her feelings squarely. This was also very good.

Time passed very quickly, in a flash, half a month had already passed.

In this period of time, Su Luo hadn't stayed at the Su residence, rather, she went to Southern Mountains.

Chapter 677 – Breaking through to advance a rank (2)

Whatever Su Luo wanted to do, Su Zian had no ability to interfere because His Highness Prince Jin's prestige could still be felt.

The spirit energy on Southern Mountains was rich and clean, naturally much better when compared to the capital.

Su Luo cultivating in this kind of environment was simply doing half the work and getting twice the result.

On this day, Su Luo was sitting at the summit cultivating, and she could faintly feel that she was about to break through. Her heart was delighted and was just about to take advantage of this spirit force to break through to the fifth rank.

But, just at this time, she felt something dangerous approaching.

She felt as if she was being secretly watched by a viper. That kind of scorching, malicious gaze that made one's blood run cold.

Now, Su Luo was at a critical juncture in her cultivation, how could she tolerate being disturbed? If midway, something changed, the consequences were too horrible to contemplate.

As a result, Su Luo could only close her eyes tightly, pretending as if she felt nothing out of the ordinary and immersing herself only in cultivation.

The weeds that were trampled on by leather boots gave off rustling noises.

A large, tall and straight figure appeared in front of Su Luo.

One could only see a handsome face, with a proud expression. His every move had the arrogant mannerism of a young master from a powerful family.

He looked at Su Luo, his mouth hooked into an icily arrogant and malicious arc, and sneered: “Loathsome girl, see where you can run to now!”

Li Aoqiong? The Jade Lake’s Li family? Him appearing here was absolutely not a good thing.

Su Luo secretly complained in her heart.

Did she, in a former incarnation, exterminate his entire family or dig up their ancestral tomb? Why was it that his entire family wouldn’t let her go, time and time again coming to provoke her?

Su Luo was bitterly cultivating and could not speak.

Li Aoqiong smiled sinisterly: “Loathsome girl, from the beginning, when you snatched away the happiness that should belong to Yaoyao, your fate was doomed to be hunted and killed by Li family. Don’t be upset, it’s merely a quick thing, very fast.”

Li Aoqiong neared Su Luo step by step, finally, he stood only two steps away from Su Luo.

Seeing Su Luo cultivating, Li Aoqiong’s mouth hooked into an immensely pleased, cold smile. This time, without Nangong Liuyun’s protection, see if this loathsome girl could still escape the hands of the Jade Lake’s Li family!

He extended his white, thin arm, grabbing towards Su Luo’s Lingtai.

If he could hit it, all of Su Luo’s martial arts would be wasted. Moreover, if the Lingtai was to be broken, she would never be able to cultivate again!

Just at this moment of imminent peril, suddenly, a cold light shot towards Li Aoqiong’s chest.

That cold light was fast as well as accurate, and Li Aoqiong had no choice but to quickly retreat a few steps, very dangerously avoiding the sneak attack.

“Who is it?!” Li Aoqiong’s entire body was on guard, revealing a cautious expression, both eyes looking all around.

“Li Aoqiong, your words truly sound like farts. Really losing all of Jade Lake’s Li family’s face!” A person’s figure landed from the top of an ancient tree. Shockingly, it turned out to be Beichen Ying.

From behind him, at the same time, Lan Xuan's figure also appeared.

Lan Xuan, with hands crossed at his chest, and with not quite a smile, cast sidelong glances at Li Aoqiong, "The stately oldest son and Young Master of the Jade Lake's Li family, the future master of Jade Lake Palace, would go back on his own words and slap himself in the face. Li Aoqiong, you are really interesting!"

Seeing these two figures, a haze flashed through Li Aoqiong's eyes.

These two bastards who wouldn't just die and go away!

With great difficulty, he had waited until Nangong Liuyun left, but the result was that these two sons of powerful families were guarding at Su Luo's side. It was as if they were afraid she would be bullied, could this Su Luo, in a former life, had saved the world? So, this lifetime, she would be so lucky!

"Mind your own business, f*ck off." Li Aoqiong's gaze was as icy as the edge of a blade.

Beichen Ying laughed heartily, jumping out with both hands at his hips: "I won't just f*ck off. I want to see the result of you being the butt of jokes from going back on your words. What are you going to do about it?"

Lan Xuan also laughed heartily.

1) Lintai is actually an acupuncture point on the center back of a person's spin. I think the author was referring to that ball of chi stored somewhere near a person's belly.

Chapter 678 – Breaking through to advance a rank (3)

Lan Xuan leisurely cast Li Aoqiong a sideways glance: “If you have the ability, then drag this lord away. Come on over, come!”

These two scoundrels!

Li Aoqiong’s eyes were gloomy and filled with hatred: “Since you both want to court death, then do not blame me for being rude!”

“Oh, want to make an enemy out of Beichen Palace? This lord is standing right here, why don’t you try killing me and see.” Beichen Ying stood there with his back straight and boldly patted his chest.

“Oh, you wish to make an enemy out of the Green Jade Palace? This lord is standing right here, why don’t you try to kill me and see.” Lan Xuan, not only had he learned Beichen Ying’s temperament, he had also learned Beichen Ying’s movements.

These two youngsters were both similarly handsome, full of spirit and jumping around in a lively manner. They also used the same speech and action. Seeing this made others unable to restrain a laugh.

Seeing the pair’s ‘you go I follow’ dialog, a strange mood flashed through Su Luo’s appearance.

Suddenly, her complexion flushed red and immediately following that, a mouthful of blood wildly sprayed out.

Seeing Su Luo spitting out blood, Beichen Ying and Lan Xuan’s complexion was greatly alarmed. They hastily wanted to step forward but was blocked in the front by Li Aoqiong.

Su Luo followed it up immediately with spitting out another mouthful of blood.

“Sister-in-law!” Beichen’s complexion was filled with worry, simply more worried than if he himself had spit out blood.

“Li Aoqiong, you motherf*cker, get out of the way! You motherf*cker, looking to court death!” Lan Xuan was so anxious that his eyes turned red, and waved his fist towards Li Aoqiong’s chest.

Li Aoqiong moved his body sideways nimbly to evade the fist.

As for Su Luo.

After she vomited out two mouthfuls of blood, her whole body’s spiritual energy surged through her entire body faster than the eye could see. The spiritual energy formed into threads and flew into Su Luo’s five viscera and six bowels, as well as her meridians.

An unending stream flowing in.

This scene made Beichen Ying and the others watching dumbfounded.

This was the sign for breaking through, and also, it was the most important moment in being promoted a level. The consequences of having this moment interrupted by others was too horrible to imagine!

Looking at Su Luo in front of him, Li Aoqiong’s face condensed into ice, an ice-cold killing intent flashing through his eyes.

This time, if he let her get promoted, she would be fifth rank.

This loathsome girl, within such a short time, would actually repeatedly get promoted. If she was allowed to continue to grow, in the future, wouldn’t she be too strong?

In contrast, Yaoyao was always praised as a little genius, yet at her age, she was merely at the summit of the fifth rank.

Li Aoqiong was actually somewhat worried. Based on Su Luo’s promotion speed, there will come a day when she would surpass Yaoyao. As a result, he must eliminate this kind of possibility in the cradle. Moreover, he distinctly felt that Su Luo would be a threat to the Jade Lake’s Li family in the future.

Noticing that Li Aoqiong's eyes contained killing intent, Beichen Ying and Lan Xuan's eyes both flashed with anxiety.

Before, Li Aoqiong merely wanted to waste Su Luo's martial arts, but now, his eyes contained a thick killing intent, really made people anxious.

Beichen Ying's speed was very fast, in a flash, his body appeared, blocking in front of Su Luo. He raised his head, and his ice-cold gaze glared at Li Aoqiong: "Stop your crazy way of thinking! If you dare lay your hands on her, wait until Nangong Liuyun comes back, afterwards, you should understand the seriousness of the consequences."

Li Aoqiong momentarily paused and stared blankly. Following this, his eyes flashed an overcast and deeply cold smirk: "A person dying is like extinguishing a lamp. Only when she is dead, will Nangong Liuyun treat Yaoyao wholeheartedly."

"Bullshit!" Lan Xuan coldly smiled, "If she dies, Nangong will certainly go crazy. Based on his temperament, when the time comes, extinguishing the entire Jade Lake's Li family is not impossible! You should stop before it's too late, do not blame me for not warning you!"

"Extinguish my Jade Lake's Li family? Hehe, that also depends on whether or not he has the ability!" Li Aoqiong raised his right hand, a ray of light quickly flashing out from his arm.

Chapter 679 – Breaking through to advance a rank (4)

He was of the lightning element system.

Among all the elements, the lightning element had the strongest attack power.

Not waiting for Li Aoqiong to make a move, Beichen Ying and Lan Xuan's eyes met, both of them simultaneously pounced towards Li Aoqiong like hungry wolves!

Li Aoqiong, as the Jade Lake's Li family's Young Master, his strength was very strong. Among their younger generation, only Nangong Liuyun could completely suppress him.

Originally, Beichen Ying and Lan Xuan could not hold him off. However, because Su Luo had given each of them a martial arts secret book before, their strengths had increased by leaps and bounds. Due to them having studied diligently, in the end, they were able to break through to the seventh rank. As a result, the two of them together could now fight Li Aoqiong to a standstill.

However, in the end, the scales still fell towards one side.

One could only see a shadow slowly appearing behind Li Aoqiong.

“Second Uncle Li?” Seeing this, Beichen Ying's complexion immediately became ugly.

The Li family's second uncle was Li Yaoxiang.

The Li family was truly extremely shameless!

They agreed not to chase and kill Su Luo within a year, yet, they went back on their words. Nangong had just left and they had already torn up the contract.

This still does not count.

One Li Aoqiong at the summit of seventh rank was still fine, now, an eighth rank Li Yaoxiang had come. These two were both masters at the Jade Lake Palace.

Dispatching the two of them just to kill a young woman? The Jade Lake's Palace had simply become extremely shameless.

An angry expression appeared on Beichen Ying's face: "Second Uncle Li, based on your status, you aren't moving to kill the younger generation, right? If these words spread, it won't be pleasant to hear."

Li Yaoxiang had his hands folded behind him, leisurely standing in his original position and even smiling coldly towards Beichen Ying: "The younger generation should not meddle in other people's business, to avoid bringing calamity to your Beichen Palace."

Among the three great palaces, Beichen Palace's relationship with the Green Jade's Palace was pretty good. However, they were always estranged with the Jade Lake Palace.

Beichen Ying was so angry that his complexion became beet red and he threateningly said: "Second Uncle Li, if you truly make a move, then do not blame this nephew for spreading this matter to the storytellers. At that time, Li family's second uncle's name will resound all over the continent! Jade Lake's Li family going back on their words will also be spread. At that time, when the Jade Lake's Palace's reputation reaches rock bottom, then do not come to blame this nephew!"

Li Yaoxiang coldly smiled.

One could only see him fling his sleeves, and immediately, ten blue-gowned people noiselessly surrounded Su Luo in a circle, who was sitting on the spirit stone altar.

Immediately, thick killing intent tensed up the atmosphere.

Li Yaoxiang cast Beichen Ying a glance, a crafty expression flashing through his gaze: "They are not people from the Li family, and could not be regarded as going against the contract."

Clearly, he knew about the one year agreement between Li Aoqiong and Su Luo.

Li Yaoxiang's hands moved slightly.

As long as he waved his hands, the ten assassins surrounding Su Luo would immediately cut her up into fine powder, forever disappearing from this continent.

Seeing the tragedy that was about to happen, Beichen Ying and Lan Xuan could not stop their fighting to help, their hearts were extremely anxious.

They were extremely close to Nangong Liuyun, so they knew that this time, Nangong Liuyun's feelings towards Su Luo was genuine. His feelings would inevitably shock them speechless if they underestimated its depths. In his heart, there simply was no place for Li Yaoyao, even their childhood feelings growing up didn't exist anymore.

If Su Luo was to lose her life under their protection, then, their brotherly affection would also come to an end.

The most important thing was, no one could imagine what kind of crazy things he would do if he learned the news of Su Luo's death.

"Li Yaoxiang, quickly stay your hand!" The more Beichen Ying thought about it, the more terrified he became. Seeing Li Yaoxiang raise his hands high, immediately, he started to shout loudly from worry.

"Motherf*cking Li Yaoxiang, you wish to destroy the entire Jade Lake's Li family, right? Quickly stay your hand! Stop!" Lan Xuan was so anxious that his eyes became red, abandoning the fight with Li Aoqiong and directly rushing towards Li Yaoxiang!

Chapter 680 – Breaking through to advance a rank (5)

However, before Lan Xuan could rush forward, two blue-clothed people had already stepped out to block Lan Xuan's way.

"F*ck off!" Lan Xuan was so angry that he threw his fist towards them.

However, the two blue-clothed people were also not weak. They directly tied up Lan Xuan, not giving him an opportunity to get away.

After Lan Xuan left, the pressure on Beichen Ying suddenly increased. Facing Li Aoqiong's pressure closing in step by step, Beichen Ying could only barely ward him off. He was unable to be distracted into doing other things such as helping.

Li Yaoxiang gazed at Su Luo who was immersed in cultivating. The corner of his mouth raised into a strangely cold smile.

No matter how much of a genius you are, since you do not have a strong and solid family background, in the end, you will still fall down before you become formidable.

People that dared to become the Jade Lake's Li family's enemy, there was always just one word, and that was: death!

Li Yaoxiang's hand that was raised, with strength, waved down!

Just at this critical time of life and death——

Suddenly.

A figure appeared unexpectedly, dropping from the sky. A white ripple with Su Luo at its center spread in all directions, blocking all the surrounding blue-clothed people outside.

Li Yaoxiang's eyes flashed with deep anger, and in an ice-cold manner, stared fixedly at the person who came.

"Third Uncle!" Beichen Ying immediately shouted out loud from being pleasantly surprised.

The person who came was precisely Beichen Ying's third uncle, Elder Beichen. Before, he had agreed to Beichen Ying's request to be one of the judges for Su Luo and Su Qing's life-and-death duel.

Behind Elder Beichen, Anye Ming's figure slowly appeared.

Beichen Ying sent Anye Ming a gesture of approval. Anye Ming's forehead was filled with tiny beads of sweat, and he complacently raised his brows.

Previously, Beichen Ying and Lan Xuan had discovered that the atmosphere here was different, so they quickly rushed over. For the purpose of having insurance, he went to find Elder Beichen. He didn't expect that it would truly come in handy at a critical moment.

When Li Yaoxiang saw Elder Beichen, his complexion immediately became very ugly. His eyes flashed an even deeper hazy black color.

Elder Beichen looked at Li Yaoxiang and inevitably gave voice to his derision: "You are also at such an age, why should you bother about a little girl? Isn't this throwing away your dignity and status?"

Li Yaoxiang's pair of hands was folded at his back. He arrogantly and coldly snorted: "You old fart, I advise you not to meddle in other people's business, so as to avoid inviting trouble for yourself."

Elder Beichen's smile was calm and collected as the wind. His clothes were blown by the wind, giving off crackling sounds. He seemed to possess a hint of having an immortal flavor in his bones.

He cast Li Yaoxiang a glance and secretly sighed a few times: "Don't tell me that you truly wish to make Jade Lake's Li Family disappear from this continent in ten years' time? Li family's Second Elder, you must think clearly about this."

Having heard these words, Li Yaoxiang's anger, in a moment, started to spread from his chest.

What did this old fart mean? Was he hinting that Nangong Liuyun would exterminate the Jade Lake's Li family because of this loathsome girl? First, not mentioning whether Nangong Liuyun would do this or not, but just speaking of exterminating the Jade Lake's Palace, he still didn't have this ability!

"Speak less nonsense, if you have the ability, then hand-to-hand combat will do the choosing!" Li Yaoxiang never got along with Elder Beichen. Now, he was even angrier because he had come to disturb them, as a result, he made his move without leaving the other party any sentiments nor face.

Elder Beichen was also not someone who was easy to deal with.

Able to oversee the country's Mercenary Union, how could he be a simple character?

As a result, the two people came and went, the battle exceptionally intense.

Spiritual energy exploded forth. In the air, the spiritual energy fluctuated violently and shook.

Slowly, the two people's battlefield moved to mid-air, and flew to another mountain top to continue fighting for three hundred rounds.

These two people's strengths were inherently equally matched, in addition, these years of fighting each other, they have already clearly felt out the opponent's strategies. Therefore, even though the fight was intense, they could not injure each other. Neither was one able to suppress the other.

Very likely, they would fight for three days and three nights before determining the outcome.

After these two experts had left the battlefield, the place quieted down for a second.

Chapter 681 – Breaking through to advance a rank (6)

Afterwards, those blue-clothed people regained their senses and instantly flocked towards Su Luo!

Anye Ming made his move, but he could only block two blue-clothed people.

Lan Xuan, similarly, could also only hold back two blue-clothed people.

The remaining six blue-clothed people raised their falchion swords and rushed towards Su Luo. Seeing the tip of the blade was chopping down over Su Luo's head—

Just at this extremely urgent juncture, Su Luo still remained seated cross-legged on top of the spirit altar. Her pair of eyes was closed tightly, sunk deep in cultivation, as if unaware of everything that was happening around her, completely unaware of the danger that was about to descend.

At this moment, the deep cold edge of the blades shot down from high up in the sky—

Just as the blades were about to chop down, one could only see a white light shoot out from Su Luo's sleeves.

Just at this extremely urgent second, the little divine dragon shot out, his little claws swiping towards the blades with lightning speed.

“Bang—”

A violent explosive noise echoed in the air.

How sharp were the little divine dragon's claws, one could see that where his claws moved past, the blades immediately shattered into pieces.

The six blue-clothed assassins were all looking with disbelief at this white puppy. Then, they looked at each other in dismay.

When did a white puppy's strength become so heaven-defying?

Those blades they used were no ordinary weapons. They were high grade weapons refined by the Jade Lake's Li family's Advance rank blacksmith. However, these weapons were actually shattered into pieces by a white puppy's claws?

This simply overturned their prior knowledge.

Since that day after entering the Royal Treasure Storage Pavilion, because he took in excessive amount of spirit energy, the little divine dragon had continuously slept without waking up.

Today, Su Luo had the faint sign of breaking through. This state disturbed the little divine dragon in her space and startled him awake.

After waking up, he was drowsy and noticed that he had grown by three centimeters. Also, he was promoted from the previous level of fifth rank to sixth rank.

Su Luo had disturbed him, thus letting him be promoted first.

The little divine dragon looked at his little paws and excitedly laughed. He was just preparing to go out and find Little Master to be praised. However, unexpectedly, just at this moment, a thick killing intent directly attacked towards Little Master.

The little divine dragon's foolishly adorable pair of limpid eyes flashed with a blank expression. He subconsciously charged out, his sharp little claws clawing at those dangerous weapons.

This was his instinctive reaction.

However, his actions caused a scene that startled and shocked people.

The six blue-clothed people mutually glanced at each other and simultaneously abandoned their weapons. Their eyes tightly closed and they begun muttering to themselves.

They were standing in a circle. Very quickly, they condensed out large fireballs

which directly smashed towards Su Luo and the little divine dragon!

The little divine dragon, seeing each and every one of these large fireballs, an innocent expression flashed through his eyes.

He stood motionlessly on Su Luo's shoulder. His eyes had a strange and puzzled expression as he swept these blue-clothed people a glance.

Not knowing why, once those blue-clothed people were swept by the little divine dragon's eyes, they unexpectedly felt embarrassed and at a complete loss. After studying the cause, they still didn't know why.

But very quickly, the little divine dragon gave them an answer.

Just when these large fireballs flew about a hand's width in front of Su Luo, the little divine dragon suddenly opened his mouth. Abruptly, from his little mouth, shot out six small fireballs.

These six small fireballs accurately attacked towards the six huge fireballs.

The small fireballs were dark red in color.

Whereas the large fireballs were crimson red in color.

Just as the small fireballs were about to hit the large fireballs, the six blue-clothed people coldly laughed.

The small fireballs were only at the fifth rank, actually daring to fight against their large fireballs?

Fire could be suppressed by water.

This was common sense!

However, using fire to fight fire!

As expected, a magical beast's brain does not think well.

However, before the cold smile at the corner of the six blue-clothed people's mouths could disappear, instead, it froze on their lips.

Chapter 682 – Breaking through to advance a rank (7)

Even though they had discovered those six little fireballs, but the six little fireballs, with an absolutely tyrannical attitude, attacked the large fireballs!

Afterwards?

Afterwards, those six little, deep red fireballs rapidly swallowed up the large fireballs. In less than a few seconds, the large fireballs turned to ashes, fading away in mid-air.

The six blue-clothed men looked at each other in dismay, in this glance, they all had a deeply alarmed expression.

If it was fire battling fire, then fine, but to actually have the small fireballs achieve complete victory over the large fireballs? What kind of f*cking situation was this? They completely couldn't understand it.

The little divine dragon felt that having the small fireballs swallow up the large fireballs was not satisfyingly enough. Consequently, he controlled the fireballs to smash very fiercely towards the six blue-clothed men.

In fact, these six blue-clothed men's strength were not at all bad.

At least two of them could hold off Lan Xuan and each of the others.

But the little divine dragon's appearance and display was really too shocking, to the point that they greatly overestimated the little divine dragon's cultivation level.

The six blue-clothed men were stalled by the little divine dragon, momentarily, they were caught up in a melee.

Suddenly, the spirit force around Su Luo exploded out, one after another,

rippling waves could be clearly seen with the naked eye.

A buzzing noise echoed between the heavens and earth.

Everyone knew that Su Luo had successfully advanced a rank.

Su Luo, who was on the spirit altar, slowly opened her eyes.

What entered her eyes was a spread out, chaotic battlefield.

Swords met, elemental attacks were used, one could only see that the surroundings were dazzlingly bright with many magnificent postures, intense and lively.

“Ahhh——” Suddenly, Beichen Ying burst out with a shout of pain.

It turned out that Li Aoqiong, discovering that Su Luo had successfully advanced, immediately flew into a rage from humiliation, and sent a severe palm strike towards Beichen Ying. Beichen Ying, who was already at the end of his spirit strength, was immediately sent flying. His entire body arced out in a parabola and fell to the back.

Where would Li Aoqiong still have the mood to care about Beichen Ying. His foot pressed down on the ground, his entire person was like a phoenix spreading its wings, rapidly attacking towards Su Luo.

During the time when he flew towards her, his hands also did not stay idle.

A stream of thunderous lightning flashed with cold brilliance, directly smashing towards Su Luo.

Thunderous Lightning attack!

This was the most formidable elemental attack!

Even though she had successfully reached the fifth rank, but, how could she cope when faced with Li Aoqiong, this type of monster who was at the summit of seventh rank. Su Luo was still like a puny child in front of him.

“Freeze!” Su Luo reacted quick-wittedly in this emergency and squeezed out the Great Dimensional Imprint.

Now, Su Luo had already cultivated to the second level of the Great Dimensional Imprint, and was able to cultivate the nothingness of space. Even

though the size of this nothingness of space was a little smaller than the size of a soccer ball.

However, it was very effective!

That stream of thunderous lightning, with the sound of thunder, struck down like one hundred fifty thousand kilograms. It was so powerful as to be impossible to block!

Su Luo's luck was simply too good, she had no way to accurately calculate the speed and timing. But, she was still able to place that thunderous lightning into the nothingness of space.

Seeing the frantically spasming lightning dragon-like serpent, in the nothingness of space slowly change into nothingness, only now did Su Luo wipe away a handful of sweat.

If she was hit by this thunderous lightning from Li Aoqiong, then, the her right now would have already been charred black.

Su Luo was extremely glad, however, Li Aoqiong was so furious that he nearly suffered an internal injury.

“Loathsome girl, you might be able to stop it the first time, but see how you will stop it a second time!” Li Aoqiong laughed sinisterly, but the movement of his hands did not slow down.

One could only see him crush a jade pendant in his hand, afterwards, he silently mouthed a few words. Spirit strength burst out from his palms, and one after another, thunderous lightning was condensed in mid-air.

This time, there wasn't just one thunderous lightning dragon-like serpent, rather, there were a countless number of them. Moreover, these thunderous lightning dragon-like serpents continued to grow and become stronger...

A shocked and terrified feeling flashed through Su Luo's heart.

What could she do? If she let Li Aoqiong successfully condense out these lightning, then there would be nowhere for her to run.

This time, Li Aoqiong clearly had gone all out!

He had crushed that jade pendant, and it was probably a precious talisman his

elders gave him to save his life!

This time, he must be staking everything on this one strike!

Chapter 683 – Breaking through to advance a rank (8)

A sliver of astonishment flashed through Su Luo's heart.

Crushed talisman..... Suddenly, a light flashed on in Su Luo's head.

Li Aoqiong had a talisman to protect him, she also had one!

Not to mention the jade piece given by the little divine dragon's father, she still hadn't used the spirit pinball she had picked from the imperial palace!

Su Luo quickly pulled out the spirit pinball, subconsciously, she was going to smash it towards Li Aoqiong.

But now, she somewhat hesitated.

Based on her experience of using the spirit pinball on Li Aotian from last time, she discovered that her luck was not just typically good. In addition, this good luck might be transmitted to the other party through the spirit pinball.

Because last time, she lifted Li Aotian from seventh rank to eighth rank, thus leading to her own difficulty in escaping.

Just recalling this past.....was like a handful of bitter tears.

At this moment, the sky was covered with black clouds, the entire sky became overcast, nearly pitch-black.

"This person has gone mad, quickly block him!" After Beichen Ying spit out a few mouthfuls of blood, his head actually became sober.

He covered his chest wound, limping towards Su Luo.

Seeing the spirit pinball in Su Luo's hand and once again looking at Li Aoqiong, he immediately became anxious. He shouted in a loud voice at Su Luo: "Why are

you still hesitating? After he succeeds in condensing them, all of us will die!”

Su Luo gloomily cast him a glance.

He was acting like someone who was in comfortable circumstances that didn't know the bitterness of misfortune.

Sometimes, when your luck is too good, it's also a kind of offense.

With Li Aoqiong present, Su Luo couldn't foolishly tell him about the matter with Li Aotian.

“Quickly smash it!” Beichen Ying was so anxious that his hair nearly gave off smoke.

“Then you do it.” Su Luo had too much confidence in her own luck, to the extent that she totally didn't dare do it.

“This spirit pinball has already recognized you as its master, how can I smash it?” Beichen Ying cast a depressed glance at Su Luo, “In the end, why are you hesitating? It's not because you are reluctant to part with this spirit pinball, right?”

Su Luo looked at him with a faint complaining expression, and solemnly stated again: “It's you who wants me to smash it, right?”

“Yes.” Beichen Ying was so anxious that he wished he could help her smash it. Could it be that she didn't see how urgent the current situation was?

Li Aoqiong was arranging the thunderous lightning dragon-like serpent array.

Beneath this array, not a single enemy would be left alive.

Under these kind of circumstances, why was she still hesitating?

Su Luo was still uncertain: “Then, if he was smashed into the ninth rank..... then you aren't allowed to blame me okay?”

“Snort——” Beichen Ying gave a cold laugh, “I say, Sister-in-law, are you saying delusional words? The spirit pinball is a sharp weapon to wound people! Do you know the probability of being smashed into ascending a rank after being smashed by a spirit pinball? It's less than one in ten thousands, my dear Sister-in-law! Enough, stop hesitating, quickly smash it!”

Su Luo really didn't have the heart to tell him, these kind of odds, she had really encountered it before.

"All right then....." Su Luo thought about it and sighed in a very helpless manner. If she had to smash it, then she will smash it, resigning herself to fate!

She hoped that this time, her luck would be lacking a little, just lacking a little more!

Su Luo spit into her hand, touching a little bad luck. Afterwards, she condensed the spirit power in her entire body and smashed the spirit pinball towards Li Aoqiong's forehead.

There was a benefit to the spirit pinball.

That was, once it locked onto a target, the opponent basically wouldn't be able to escape. It was a crack shot with no probability of missing the target.

The spirit pinball was thrown in an arc towards Li Aoqiong.

At this moment, ninety percent of Li Aoqiong's concentration was on his spirit strength in mid-air, leaving only ten percent perception to deal with Su Luo and the others.

He heard Su Luo and Beichen Ying's dialogue very clearly.

He had already experienced the might of a spirit pinball, this kind of weapon with such a large killing power, there was no way to block it!

Chapter 684 – Breaking through to advance a rank (9)

Li Aotian was infuriated half to death in his heart.

Seeing that this array was about to be successfully completed, and then this evil moth burst out, simply made him want to walk away in rage!

He could feel that this spirit pinball's might was unparalleled, its imposing manner was like thunder weighing one hundred and fifty thousand kilograms. Even from a far distance, it could shock a person's heart.

Li Aoqiong had no choice but to reluctantly break off the eighty percent completed array, everything was ruined at the last minute.

Seeing that the spirit pinball was flying towards him, he turned around and dropped down to immediately escape.

However, he still underestimated the strength of the spirit pinball.

This spirit pinball was neither seventh nor was it eighth rank, it was a spirit pinball with the strength of a ninth rank.

In this lifetime, Li Aoqiong had never seen such a strong spirit pinball, so his evaluation of its speed was a failure.

In the course of his attempted escape, the spirit pinball ruthlessly smashed into his back.

“Boom——”

A mushroom cloud-shaped flame exploded out from the entire mountain top, the flames rolling and surging to the sky.

The original dark sky, now, was bright as day, the dark clouds rapidly

dispersing.

Before the spirit pinball exploded, Beichen Ying had already pushed Su Luo down, with his body pressing down on her back, his body protecting hers.

When the spirit pinball exploded, the debris from the flames of the backlash covered his back with layers and layers of ash.

The surroundings were frighteningly quiet.

A death-like quiet and silence.

It was quite a while later before Beichen Ying shook off the layers of earth on his back. He struggled to climb up with great difficulty, in passing, he pulled Su Luo up.

Even though she was protected under his body, Su Luo's face was still completely covered with dust. She looked disheveled and cut quite a sorry figure.

Beichen Ying saw Su Luo's ghastly appearance, pointed at her and immediately started to laugh heartily. He laughed until tears were falling out: "Hahaha, Sister-in-law, how is it you look like a little striped cat, hahaha——"

"Damn your laughter, look at yourself and then say it again." Su Luo peevishly gave him a push. Beichen Ying could not stand stably and immediately, his butt hit the ground.

Su Luo couldn't help but be somewhat panicked, she hurriedly half-kneeled to examine Beichen Ying: "How is it you are this weak and can't even stand up to the wind? Is it because you are injured somewhere? Quickly, let me take a look."

Beichen Ying's mouth split open in a laugh. He laughed until his two small canine teeth were revealed. He waved his hand: "It's nothing, I won't die."

Su Luo looked at him with concern: "Still saying it's nothing, you can't even stand steadily."

Seeing his entire face and body covered in dust, Su Luo couldn't help but feel somewhat guilty.

Originally a youngster glowing with health and vigor, normally, he would ride a horse to cross a bridge, a playboy from a rich family that was welcomed by the entire brothel house. That handsome, extraordinary, clear little face was liked by

how many young ladies?

But, in order to protect her, he had become covered from head to toe in grime, resulting in such a disgraceful appearance.

Moreover, for the purpose of stalling Li Aoqiong, she didn't know how many hits he had received from Li Aoqiong or how serious his internal wounds were.

Seeing the bloodstains on his chest and his tattered clothing, Su Luo felt increasingly guiltier.

Beichen Ying didn't even pay the least bit of attention to his own injuries, his face was all smiles with two little canine teeth flashing white light. He was just about to say a few sentences to make fun of Su Luo, but the smile on his face stiffened in the next moment.

Su Luo could feel that the surrounding atmosphere had become strange.

Seeing the stiff but twitching corner of Beichen Ying's mouth, Su Lou had a very bad premonition: "What, what's wrong?"

Beichen Ying's eyes were opened so wide that it was round. For a long time, he didn't speak and only used his finger to point at Su Lou's back.

Now, a dense black figure appeared behind Su Lou.

Under the sunlight, this figure cast a shadow on Su Luo's body.

Su Luo looked at her hand that tossed the spirit pinball, still, she finally bit the bullet and abruptly turned back— —

When she saw the person in front of her, Su Luo only felt her eyebrows twitch.

What kind of f*cking luck was this?

Chapter 685 – God descending from heaven to subdue (1)

Seeing the scene before her, Su Luo wished she could slap her own head and die.

The person before her was pitch black from head to toe. His hair had been burnt. On his body, there were wounds in many places that were dripping with blood.

However, the spiritual strength hovering around his whole body was truly too strong.

“Li Aoqiong?” Su Luo stayed standing where she was, staring blankly and foolishly muttering to herself.

“Ninth rank now...” Beichen Ying quietly spat out one line, then he silently turned his head to look at Su Luo: “That spirit pinball, why didn’t you smash it at me?”

F*ck! From the short time at the peak of seventh rank, Li Aoqiong was promoted to the ninth rank. What sort of f*cking luck was this? It just made people jealous enough to go mad, okay?

Su Luo silently took a glance at him and depressingly said, “If I had known the results earlier, then I might as well have bashed myself with it.”

Now, she was still this weak, always in the stage of being chased to be killed. If she had smashed this spirit pinball on her own head, her cultivation speed would definitely be like a rocket and fly up in leaps!

Beichen Ying was so twitchy, he nearly grabbed his hair. He grabbed Su Luo’s slim-as-a-thread shoulders and shook it desperately: “Sister-in-law, oh, Sister-in-law! You, this-What sort of luck is this that you have? Is the Goddess of Fortune

really your mother?”

Su Luo gloomily looked at her own pair of hands, then innocently looked at Beichen Ying: “Is this considered good luck or bad luck?”

“With regards to you guys, this is definitely not good luck.” A grim voice sounded from in front of Su Luo.

Li Aoqiong’s complexion was gloomy and frightening. He fixedly stared at Su Luo with a sinister measuring look. The corner of his mouth hooked into a sneer that was both sinister and horrifying: “Loathsome girl, this time, it’s really thanks to you. Otherwise, it would have been very difficult for me to be promoted to the ninth rank.”

Right now, within the younger generation, he was fully deserving of being number one. Even if Nangong Liuyun came out, so what?

Heng, heng. Nangong Liuyun, it’s better that you come out! He just so happened to be able to, with one step, tread Nangong Liuyun under his feet!

The corner of Su Luo’s mouth pursed slightly.

Li Aoqiong saying it like this gave her an even stronger urge to vomit blood.

Inside Su Luo’s heart, all kinds of flavors of regret were interweaved with each other. She was so regretful that her intestines had nearly turned green. If this moment could start over again, she would definitely smash the spirit pinball on her own head!

“Got some cheap advantages, and just flaunts it. What kind of great character is that?” Su Luo curled her lip and scoffed twice.

At an angle Li Aoqiong could not see, Beichen Ying silently stood up and quietly gathered up all the spiritual strength in his body.

Li Aoqiong, with a smile that was not a smile, had hooked up the corner of his mouth and stared at Su Luo sinisterly: “Loathsome girl, trying to use the spirit pinball to smash me to death, right? Now, I’ll let you see how formidable the me that was promoted to the ninth rank by the spirit pinball is!”

When he finished speaking, Li Aoqiong was still staring at Su Luo sinisterly while laughing. A laugh that made her hair stand on ends.

At the same time, his palms started to move and the surrounding spiritual power rushed towards them. The strength of that power was so strong, it made a person's heart palpitate.

Beichen Ying, with one move, pulled at Su Luo: "What are you waiting for? Hurry up and run!!!"

Su Luo's ability to escape was not hidden.

The moment she heard Beichen Ying give the word, she turned, released her foot, and just ran.

She had already practised the Spirit Dance Steps until she was very proficient in it. Now, using it went very smoothly and easily. Her speed was as fast as flying, even Beichen Ying was nearly left behind by her.

Beichen Ying saw Su Luo, in what seemed to be a burst of wind, run in front of him, and momentarily, he was also left speechless...

Seeing that Su Luo and Beichen Ying were running far away, Li Aoqiong did not actually immediately chase after them to kill them. He stood motionless where he was, in a posture of mulling things over. It's just that the smiling expression at the corner of his mouth seemed even more eerie and sinister.

Run? You think that just because you run fast, you can get away?

Heng, heng. Today, the two of you-all must die!!!

Chapter 686 – God descending from heaven to subdue (2)

After a long while had passed. When Su Luo and Beichen Ying had run until they were only a little black dot, only then did Li Aoqiong start to move.

One could only see his features condense into icy solemnity, the transparent spirit aura he had condensed out in his hand burst out as he loudly shouted: “One thousand and fifty kilograms of thunder! Open up for me!”

Suddenly— —

This huge, matchless transparent ball of light with impossible-to-block might attacked towards them and Su Luo’s backs.

Its speed was very fast, fast as the speed of light!

Places where the transparent ball of light passed.

All the vegetation turned to ashes.

The little black dot that was Su Luo and Beichen Ying originally could be seen, but after the transparent ball of light smashed towards it, the two little black dots disappeared from sight.

Now, Su Luo was practically complaining non-stop.

Before, she was still very proud of the speed of her Spirit Dance Steps, but she never expected that Li Aoqiong’s strength that was promoted to the ninth rank would be terrifying to this degree.

The transparent ball of light was still far away, yet Su Luo could already feel that imposing might and cold, murderous aura.

She and Beichen Ying exchanged a glance, a shocked expression flashing

through both of their eyes. Immediately after, they subconsciously separated and fled in two different directions.

One left, one right, splitting from the middle, thus, the opponent wouldn't be able to wipe them out.

But the transparent ball of light did not pass through the middle, rather, very unfortunately, it exploded on the spot!

“Boom——”

The violent sound of explosion resounded to the heavens, the entire Southern Mountains swayed as if shaken by an earthquake.

Su Luo and Beichen Ying had just split up to run apart, they hadn't ran very far when they were enveloped by this powerful attack.

Su Luo covered her head and threw herself forward, originally, she had calculated it accurately. With her pounce, she could reach the tree branches and spread her weight, utilizing the flexibility of the branches to spring out.

But, no matter how many times she calculated it, she never calculated that the transparent ball of light would explode and that its force of impact would actually be this violent!

It actually forcibly shot her over one hundred meters away.

Su Luo was shaken until she was dizzy from the blast, with great difficulty, she was able to dig herself out of a pile of mud and discovered there were many injuries on her body.

Su Luo had many cuts and wounds on her body, but none of it was fatal.

This kind of life-and-death situation, who would have the time to notice whether it hurts or not. She just needed to immediately run for it.

Seeing that Li Aoqiong was about to take to the sky and arrive, Su Luo's heart was endlessly annoyed. Yet, she had no choice but to pick up her courage and hurriedly flee.

After all, Beichen Ying came from the influential Beichen family, Li Aoqiong couldn't do anything to him. Therefore, Su Luo simply just abandoned him and ran away by herself.

The Southern Mountains were a deep mountainous jungle. There was rarely any sign of people. If it was before, once Su Luo entered the jungle, she would be very hard to find.

But Li Aoqiong now was already ninth rank!

Su Luo had used a super spirit pinball to directly promote him from the summit of the seventh rank to ninth rank!

Now, he could step on air and travel, flying high in the sky to pursue her.

One was fleeing on leveled ground, while the other pursued high in the sky.

One had sustained many injuries, while the other was full of vigor.

The situation was completely one-sided, slanted towards Li Aoqiong.

While Su Luo was running deep into the mountainous jungle, she was also slapping her own head in vexation.

Su Luo wished she had another spirit pinball on hand, if it was like that, she definitely would smash it on her own head like smashing a brick.

“Loathsome girl! Where else can you run to? Obediently come out to receive death! Hahaha——” Li Aoqiong leisurely chased behind Su Luo.

If you were to ask who was the most pleased person, without a doubt, it was none other than Li Aoqiong.

His father was exactly at ninth rank in strength, at that time, he felt a ninth ranked expert's strength was tyrannical and terrifying. In front of his awe-inspiring father, he didn't even dare to breath out loud.

Chapter 687 – God descending from heaven to subdue (3)

However, right now, he was also a ninth rank! Not to mention, it was also Su Luo who had personally smashed him into the ninth rank. This kind of feeling was too uncomfortable.

Even in the Jade Lake's Palace, full of high-leveled experts, he would still be among the few strongest experts! Placed in the entire continent, who would he be afraid off? He really needed to thank Su Luo properly.

Rather, the manner in which Li Aoqiong thanked Su Luo was to slap her dead with one palm strike.

Now, Su Luo's heart was simply depressed to the extreme, while running, she was also thinking of ways to escape.

Confronted with absolute strength, any kind of trick was useless.

Su Luo thought here and there, she only had one hidden trump card left.

What to do? Could it be that she really needed to summon the little divine dragon's father to come?

“Loathsome girl, voluntarily come out to receive death and I'll leave you a whole corpse. If I catch you, humph, humph——” Li Aoqiong slapped out a palm strike towards the jungle.

Immediately, that huge area of trees collapsed and disintegrated. Even the forest in the far distance also suffered from the effects, with branches and leaves falling down in succession.

In the wake of the collapsing trees, Su Luo's figure was immediately exposed.

Li Aoqiong, who was standing in mid-air, locked onto Su Luo, the corner of his

mouth hooking into an evil sneer: “Loathsome girl, your speed is truly fast, now see where you can run to?”

Su Luo stood in place, looking at Li Aoqiong solemnly, a hazed over expression flashing through her eyes.

That life-saving jade piece was gripped tightly in her hand, she was prepared at anytime to crush it and cry for help.

Su Luo smiled easily, and indifferently shrugged her shoulders: “Not running, not going to run anymore. Anyway, in the end, you would still chase me down.”

Li Aoqiong never imagined that this girl would say not running and would stop running. According to his knowledge of her, this girl was like a lively mudfish, slipping through his fingers when he wasn’t careful.

He stared coldly and fixedly at Su Luo, a trace of regret passed through his eyes: “Su Luo, to tell you the truth, I really feel pity for you. In a short half year of time or so, from not having spirit powers to having it. To being promoted in succession to the fifth rank, this kind of achievement, when surveying the entire continent, is a genius seldom encountered once a millennium. However, you unfortunately offended the Jade Lake’s Li family, therefore, the Jade Lake’s Li family will not tolerate a genius like you maturing.”

Now, in Li Aoqiong’s eyes, Su Luo was already like a dead person.

As a result, his expression naturally carried a trace of regret: “It’s a pity, a genius like you is about to die...”

While speaking, a cynical sneer flashed across Li Aoqiong’s expression, “Su Luo, since it was you who smashed me into the ninth rank, then, in order to honor you, I will send you off with the strongest attack at the ninth rank. This way, you shouldn’t leave behind any regrets, right?”

Having heard what was said, Su Luo nearly vomited out blood from being infuriated.

Using the strongest attack at the ninth rank, this was just taunting her. okay? If it was not for her, could Li Aoqiong even reach the ninth rank?

“Within half a year, to continuously get promoted to the fifth rank, this kind of

genius, in the entire world, is also someone rarely seen. Su Luo, you originally had a beautiful future, but the Jade Lake's Li family cannot tolerate you growing up..." Li Aoqiong merely mouthed words of regret, his expression was completely the opposite.

Killing an ordinary person, was unlikely to bring him this kind of feeling of joy from killing an exceptional genius.

The corner of Li Aoqiong's mouth hooked into a fiercely sinister sarcastic smile. His palm was slowly placed at his chest, the surrounding wind automatically moved, countless amounts of spirit strength rushed towards him, forming into a circular shape that could be seen with the naked eye.

"Thunderous electric attack——" Li Aoqiong roared, between his palm, a sudden golden-colored white light burst forth.

In the moment that the golden-colored thunderous lightning nearly formed

——

Chapter 688 – God descending from heaven to subdue (4)

A kind of extremely strong spirit force exploded and shot out, enveloping Li Aoqiong's entire body.

The him right now was apathetic and icily arrogant, like a demon standing between heaven and earth. His entire body was filled with a terrifying murderous air, that kind of breath of darkness was simply terrifying to the extreme. It was as if it would directly rush into a person's body to reach the depths of a person's soul, making a person unable to even have thoughts of resistance.

This was a real expert.

This was the result of a ninth ranked expert's spirit force mixed with a mentally well-combined powerful attack.

Even if the mental force was stronger than Su Luo's, shocked thoughts still flashed through her heart.

“No choice but to crush the jade piece.” Su Luo's dark red pupils stared fixedly at Li Aoqiong. Her hand tightly gripped that jade piece that was penetrated with a white color.

Even though she still hadn't finished studying the Great Dimensional Imprint, but now, she was already at death's door, it's still more important to survive.

If she even lost her life, what's there to say about cultivation?

Although it was very regretful, however, this time, it was the correct choice.

Su Luo's heart hardened, and she used all her strength to crush that nearly transparent jade piece. However, a second later, her eyes opened wide until it was perfectly round. She wished she could directly throw the jade piece out and

smash it!

Now, if it was possible for Su Luo, she really wanted to choke the little adorable puppy's formidable father to death!

What kind of f*cking scam was this?

When she pressed down on this jade piece, wanting to crush it, she discovered that, no matter what, she couldn't crush it. In her mind, a cunning and coldly detached voice said one sentence: If you haven't finished studying it, you can't crush it.

What was called to make things even worse in a bad situation?

Perfectly describing Su Luo who was out of luck.

Now, Su Luo's face was as wrinkled as a bitter melon, whereas Li Aoqiong's formidable attack seemed to arrive in the blink of an eye.

That stream after stream of thunderous lightning seemed as if it would rent the sky apart. In the blink of an eye, it had arrived in front of Su Luo.

At this moment, Su Luo's eyes could only see an ocean of thunderous lightning.

The frantic, surging thunderous lightning flickered with an incomparably gorgeous radiance, but also carried a powerful attack power that made a person's heart palpitate. It revolved around Su Luo's delicate neck in many loops.

Su Luo was unable to ward it off.

"Sister-in-law——" Beichen Ying had rushed after her to come upon this scene, immediately, he stumbled on the next step, nearly falling to the ground.

He was still too far away, rushing towards Su Luo anxiously and desperately ——

Finished, finished, finished...Sister-in-law was about to be charred, when Nangong Liuyun returned, they absolutely would also be placed in a stove and burned to ash!

"Sister-in-law!" At this moment, Lan Xuan was also rushing towards Su Luo like

a launched artillery——

His eyes burst out with chilliness and alarm! He vowed, if something was to really happen to Su Luo, he will certainly kill his way to the Jade Lake's Li family!!!

The little divine dragon's eyes that were always drowsy and perplexed, now, was already moist. His eyes exploded with blood red rays of hatred!

“Awoo, awoo, awoo!!!” The little divine dragon's howls were filled with pain!

That band after band of thunderous lightning bound tightly around Su Luo's slender neck, winding together loop after loop.

Was he just tormenting her, to simply strangle her to death slowly!

Su Luo could only feel her neck hurt until she was about to pass out.

Her neck that was being strangled was in extreme pain, her face turned red, with her head spinning dizzily. At anytime, she might die.

“Awoo——” The little divine dragon faced skyward and howled madly, his body was like a spring as he shot towards Li Aoqiong!

“Hiss——” He aimed at Li Aoqiong's calf and heavily bit down.

The little divine dragon's unpredictable, strange speed was very fast, but now, Li Aoqiong was really too strong. So, he was able to capture the little divine dragon in one grab.

“If you don't want the Jade Lake's Li family to disappear from this continent, then release him!” Su Luo's ice-cold eyes stared fixedly at Li Aoqiong!

“Loathsome girl, with death near at hand, you still dare to threaten me, courting death!” Li Aoqiong added more strength to his thunderous lightning dragon-like serpent, immediately, Su Luo was in so much pain that she let out a moan.

Chapter 689 – God descending from heaven to subdue (5)

Now, her complexion was deep red from being strangled, the veins in her eyes were red and bursting out. She was in so much pain that she wished she could die.

“Let him go...” Su Luo pointed to the little divine dragon. With breaks between words, she continued, “He is not a dog...is...dragon...”

Because Su Luo was being strangled, her words were not clear, but Li Aoqiong heard it loud and clear.

“Dragon?” With one hand, he lifted the little divine dragon by the nape, and slapped his little butt that was sticking out, “Just this puppy, you are telling me he is a dragon? Su Luo, is there anyone that would try to fool someone like this? You really think that I am a f*cking moron!”

Su Luo, now, was deeply regretful.

If she had known earlier, she would have allowed the little divine dragon to change to his real form, that way, Li Aoqiong would not move against the little divine dragon.

After all, the dragon race’s strength was tyrannical, their fame for their fighting prowess had spread far and wide. In addition, they were extremely sensitive about losing face and covering up their errors. The entire continent had a natural reverence for the dragon race.

Li Aoqiong pinched the little divine dragon’s neck, adding more strength to his hands. The little divine dragon, who was still in his infant period, was pinched until his pink tongue extended out.

“Loathsome girl, take a last glance at this world, because you are about to

depart from it for eternity.” Li Aoqiong laughed sinisterly, not only did he increase the strength in his hand, the thunderous lightning wrapping around Su Luo’s neck also tightened at the same time.

“LuoLuo——”

“Sister-in-Law——”

Beichen Ying and Lan Xuan’s face all had an expression of despair.

“Will I die just like this?” Su Luo’s heart was strongly unreconciled to this.

She really didn’t want to die, she still had many many things she wanted to do.

Especially with regards to Nangong, last time, she promised him she would go seek Grandmaster Rong Yun to be his disciple to cure the illness in his legs. How could she just die like this?

If Nangong discovered news of her death after coming out from closed-door cultivation, how sad would he be? At that time, who could comfort him?

The outer corner of her eyes inexplicably started to moisten.

The thunderous lightning around her neck became ever more tighter and tighter...

Fuzzy images started to appear before Su Luo’s eyes, her consciousness gradually becoming less clear, the feeling of being choked becoming more and more serious.

But suddenly, Beichen Ying stopped and stared blankly.

Lan Xuan was even more so. He used all his strength to rub his eyes, his entire person stayed still, completely stupefied.

Behind them, Anye Ming who was rushing here, also halted his footsteps. With an incredulous expression, he watched the stunning scene in front of him.

“What is going on?”

Beichen Ying and Lan Xuan exchanged a look, an outrageously stunned expression was in both of their eyes.

The thunderous lightning snakes that were flaming originally had danced arrogantly around Su Luo’s neck, coiling around her loop after loop. But at this

moment, these flaming snakes seemed to be frozen, they were motionless and rigid.

It was not only this.

Within the surrounding area around Su Luo and Li Aoqiong, it seemed as if space-time stood still. The two people seemed to be fixed in place.

It was not only limited to them, the surrounding flowers, plants and trees, the burning branches, were all standing still....

Unmoving.

The surroundings were dreadfully quiet.

On Li Aoqiong's face was a terrified and shocked expression that never existed before!

Now, from the eastern sky, came a slight fluctuation in spirit force.

Even though it was subtle, it still gave everyone an intense kind of shocked feeling.

Afterwards, in mid-air, were three figures, with one in front and two behind.

It was headed by a person no more than twenty years old. He was dressed in a gorgeous, white, embroidered robe, fine jet black hair pouring down in torrents. The outline of his facial features was extremely refined and gorgeous.

He stood there with hands behind his back, shallow phoenix eyes narrowed slightly, like the cherry blossoms in April, resplendent and apathetic. His appearance had a faint alienating expression. That slightly sweeping glance was like standing above the clouds and looking down at the mass of common people.

This kind of noble and domineering king like expert, always made one feel as if they dared not to look at him straight on, with their hearts feeling intimidated by fear.

The two people behind him were clearly chamberlains, but even though they were chamberlains...

Chapter 690 – God descending from heaven to subdue (6)

Even though they were chamberlains, they were still considered extraordinarily handsome and smart-looking. Their manners were not inferior to the sons of influential families.

One could only see that person wave his sleeves, and the originally immobilized space immediately regained its motion.

Seeing the person in front of him, Li Aoqiong's entire person went into a trembling state, he immediately bowed and made his salutations: "Rong, Rong, Rong...Grandmaster Rong Yun..."

Grandmaster Rong Yun?

Beichen Ying, them three, exchanged a look of dismay. This person was the rumored sole Grandmaster level Apothecary on the continent, Grandmaster Rong Yun?

"Li Aoqiong, right?" Grandmaster Rong Yun shot him a slight glance, his expression still indifferent.

Now, Grandmaster Rong Yun was unhurriedly walking in the sky towards the ground.

Beichen Ying and them had simply become stupefied from watching.

Reaching the ninth rank and walking in the sky was not difficult, Li Aoqiong had done it.

But, this kind of leisurely strolling in the hall kind of step by step, seemingly walking down stairs, was very very few.

What kind of level of control over space and speed was this, to step down like

this from the sky?

In front of Grandmaster Rong Yun, the originally rampant and insufferably arrogant Li Aoqiong was suddenly like a rat having seen a cat, becoming spiritless.

“Yes, this subject is Li Aoqiong.” He respectfully kneeled down on one knee, giving Grandmaster Rong Yun an esteemed salute.

Grandmaster Rong Yun’s godlike phoenix eyes opened slightly, with eyes that were as clear and glossy as seawater. But, his expression was incomparably indifferent.

All of a sudden, his sleeves rose, casually as if sweeping away dust, it moved back and forth.

“Slam, slam, slam, slam, slam, slam...”

Li Aoqiong’s chest received six palm hits in succession. His body immediately flew back and away, very fiercely smacking into the sheer cliffs on the side.

Such a formidable backward force pushed Li Aoqiong deep inside the cliff, forming a deep, human-shaped pit.

Now, because Li Aoqiong was hit until he flew out, Su Luo and the little divine dragon escaped his clutches. They sat on the ground, grasping big breaths of air.

Since the appearance of Grandmaster Rong Yun, his attention seemed to be focused entirely on Li Aoqiong.

Now, Li Aoqiong, who was sent flying, shakily and falteringly crawled out from the deep hole his own body created.

At this moment, his head and face was covered in blood, the clothing on his back had already been worn down until it was destroyed, revealing a back that was drenched in blood. His entire person cut a very sorry figure indeed.

Wherefore would he still have that rampant and insufferably arrogant appearance from before?

Su Luo hugged the little divine dragon, unmovingly standing on the side to fixedly watch Grandmaster Rong Yun’s actions.

Just now, when Grandmaster Rong Yun acted, time and space completely stood still, this clearly was something only a space mage could control.

Could it be, Grandmaster Rong Yun was also a space element mage?

Grandmaster Rong Yun, from start to finish, didn't even glance at Su Luo, his cold indifferent gaze sweeping past Li Aoqiong.

Li Aoqiong was extremely furious in his heart.

He completely did not know where he had offended this enigmatic and huge character.

However, no matter what, he could not afford to offend Grandmaster Rong Yun. Not only him, even the Jade Lake's Li family could not afford to offend this kind of huge character.

Li Aoqiong, with great difficulty, resisted the anger in his heart. He was covered in dirt as he slowly walked towards Grandmaster Rong Yun.

However, before he could get near, Grandmaster Rong Yun slapped another six palm strikes towards him.

“Slam, slam, slam, slam, slam, slam....”

The violent slapping sounds resounded non-stop.

The surroundings were dreadfully quiet.

This sound landing in Su Luo and other's ears gave them a feeling of their hair standing on ends.

As expected, this time, Li Aoqiong was again sent flying, His hard back once again contributed a deep pit on these sheer cliffs.

Li Aoqiong, who once again crawled out, was simply so depressed that he nearly vomited blood!

Had Grandmaster Rong Yun gone mad?

Without saying a word, only determined his identity and directly slapped him until he was sent flying again and again?

If it was not for the fact that he was now already ninth rank, he would have already been slapped into mincemeat by this great master.

Chapter 691 – God descending from heaven to subdue (7)

Li Aoqiong originally had always been a proud and arrogant lord. It's very normal for his heart not to accept this, with his teeth clenched, he walked towards Grandmaster Rong Yun. Before getting closer, he was already glaring at Grandmaster Rong Yun.

“May I ask why would Great Master hit me? Even if I were to die, I also ask that you let me die knowing!” Li Aoqiong spit a mouthful of blood to the floor with a ‘pooh’ sound.

Grandmaster Rong Yun, with hands linked behind his back, his cultured and refined manner had a touch of summer warmth, merely, his appearance seemed indifferent: “Just now, what did you do?”

In the next moment, Li Aoqiong glared at Su Luo.

Don't tell me this loathsome girl was a relative of Grandmaster Rong Yun? Was Grandmaster standing up for her?

Thinking up to here, Li Aoqiong's eyebrows wrinkled tightly, pointed to Su Luo and said: “Who we Jade Lake's Li family want to kill, shouldn't still need Grandmaster Rong Yun's approval, right?”

Unexpectedly, now, Grandmaster Rong Yun's forehead started to knot slightly.

“Your Li family wants to kill it?” Then, the ‘it’ in Grandmaster Rong Yun's mouth clearly was not the same person as the her in Li Aoqiong's mouth (1).

However, it was obvious that Li Aoqiong didn't seem to know.

“Yes! She is a person my Jade Lake's Li family must kill, I must still ask that Great Master don't meddle in others' business!”

Li Aoqiong bit his teeth, keeping the fear in his heart under control, stuck out his neck and loudly replied.

Grandmaster used a gaze that was as if seeing an idiot to look at him, and he casually said three words: “You deserve death.”

Grandmaster Rong Yun maintained a letting him die knowing notion and actively told him the truth: “If the little divine dragon was choked to death by you, this entire piece of Blue Sky Continent will be a place that sinks into eternal damnation. Compared to this, then I’ll just sacrifice you.”

“Little, little divine dragon?” Li Aoqiong’s eyes opened wide, staring fixedly at Grandmaster Rong Yun, “Where is the little divine dragon, how could our Jade Lake’s Li family chase to kill the little divine dragon? Great Master, you are joking!”

The dragon race reproduced very slowly, therefore, they treasured little dragons to the extreme. Not to mention, the little divine dragon was the king among the dragon race.

According to the dragon race’s extreme temper and love of covering up errors, who would dare to chase to kill a little divine dragon? Probably someone tired of living? His Jade Lake’s Li family was not this stupid.

Grandmaster Rong Yun did not speak, his finger pointed towards the little puppy buried in Su Luo’s embrace.

The little puppy, after being rescued, his first reaction was to leap into Su Luo’s embrace. His two little paws grabbed onto her clothing very tightly, with large tears in his eyes as he huddled in her embrace.

Since Grandmaster Rong Yun’s appearance, this timid and adorably foolish little divine dragon, only then, would stretch out his little head to explore. His perplexed and innocent gaze continuously sized up Grandmaster Rong Yun.

Based on the dragon race’s instincts, he could feel that pure and clean spirit power on Grandmaster Rong Yun’s body. So clean like the ice and snow on the snow fields atop a plateau, not polluted with a speck of dust.

Now, seeing that Grandmaster Rong Yun had pointed to him, the little divine dragon went along and nodded his little head, admitting he was the dragon

race's little king.

“It? Just this little puppy? This is impossible!” Li Aoqiong completely did not believe it.

But his brain paused slightly.

He remembered what Su Luo had said before when she was nearly strangled to death. She said this spirit pet was not a puppy, rather, it was a little divine dragon....

At that time, Su Luo was a person nearing death, was this the so-called, the words of a man on his deathbed always comes from the heart, perhaps she didn't deceive him?

The more Li Aoqiong thought, the more his his heart was uneasy, he apprehensively stared at the little divine dragon...

“Since it is a misunderstanding, then this matter...” Li Aoqiong, seeing this matter was already not good for him, immediately decided to make a gesture of respect and leave.

However, before he could say words of goodbye, Grandmaster Rong Yun coldly humphed and said a sentence.

“Too late.”

Too late? Li Aoqiong's eyes contracted.

He still hadn't realized what's going on, and felt things shifted before his eyes, when he could see again——

1) The Chinese he/she/it is pronounced the same but written differently. Therefore, this sentence makes more sense in Chinese. Both Li Aoqiong and Rong Yun said he/she/it... Li Aoqiong was referring to Su Luo using the 'she', while Rong Yun used the 'it' referring to the little divine dragon.

Chapter 692 – God descending from heaven to subdue (8)

In the blink of an eye, Grandmaster Rong Yun had already arrived in front of him.

Don't know how Grandmaster made his move, one could only see him slam the top of Li Aoqiong's head three times.

Li Aoqiong could only feel his brain burst with throbbing pain, so painful that he nearly lost consciousness.

Afterwards, the back of Li Aoqiong's head started to give off a green smoke.

“Grandmaster Rong Yun!” Li Aoqiong was so anxious that he nearly went mad.

Grandmaster Rong Yun actually knew how to release spirit energy? Moreover, he was releasing Li Aoqiong's own spirit energy!

With great difficulty, he had been smashed into the ninth rank by Su Luo, that loathsome girl. Now, Grandmaster Rong Yun actually was releasing his spirit energy until his rank dropped!

How could this be possible?

“Great Master, are you not afraid that the Jade Lake's Li family will retaliate?” Li Aoqiong saw Grandmaster Rong Yun still standing in his original spot, calm as the wind, and he was so anxious that he burned with rage.

Beichen Ying, Lan Xuan and them exchanged a glance, a thread of elation flashing through their hearts.

This kind of karmic retribution came really fast.

Li Aoqiong, at the summit of seventh rank, directly flew to the ninth rank.

However, he just had a taste of an expert at the ninth rank, then, the spirit energy in his body was released, lowering his rank.

However, what was really a pity was that the released spirit energy had been polluted with Li Aoqiong's body's breath, so other people could not absorb it to use.

Seeing that stream of green-colored energy leaving and dissipating everywhere, a regretful expression was in everyone's eyes.

However, at this moment, a little black shadow flew out of Su Luo's embrace. With the speed of lightning, he flew towards Li Aoqiong.

Li Aoqiong jumped from being scared.

When he could see clearly again, he discovered it was that little puppy that was identified as a little divine dragon.

Now, Li Aoqiong had been fixed in place, his entire body was rigid, so he had no way to cast aside the little divine dragon.

"Get lost, get lost——" Seeing this little thing going in and out around his body, Li Aoqiong was so stressed out that his face nearly started to burst with flames from rage.

"Pooh!" Just when Li Aoqiong opened his mouth to speak, the little divine dragon aimed directly at his mouth and shot in mouth after mouth of water.

"Oh——" Li Aoqiong was so nauseated by this that he nearly cried.

The little divine dragon searched for a while before finding the place where the spirit energy gathered. He aimed directly at where Li Aoqiong was giving off the green-colored spirit energy and sucked it all in.

"Grandmaster Rong Yun, quickly ask him to stop! Quickly!" Li Aoqiong was so anxious that he started to shout loudly.

He could feel that the drop in spirit energy in his body had accelerated. It was quickly getting close to a degree that he couldn't control entirely.

If it was all sucked away by the little divine dragon, wouldn't he become a useless person?

However, Grandmaster Rong Yun merely waved his sleeves, saying with certainty: “Just now, you almost strangled him, then consider this compensating him.”

Since Grandmaster Rong Yun had already said it, then it was not allowed to be altered.

“But, if it continues like this, then I will become a useless person!” Li Aoqiong was infuriated to the point of arguing loudly.

“A useless person is always better than a dead person.” Grandmaster Rong Yun unsympathetically glanced at him, then, with his hands at his back, he stood aside.

Li Aoqiong was so infuriated that he nearly vomited out blood.

He knew, if this was really a little divine dragon, then based on his conduct a moment ago, destroying his ability to cultivate would still be considered a light punishment.

But——

“Great Master, this clearly is a puppy, where did you see that this is a little divine dragon?” Why won’t Grandmaster Rong Yun let him go? His spirit energy was almost completely gone from being released.

As if to corroborate Li Aoqiong’s words.

Having absorbed Li Aoqiong’s spirit energy, now, the little divine dragon started to change.

One could only see streams of mist condense into ball shape, wrapping his little body inside it.

After the time it seemingly took to drink a cup of tea had passed.

This round ball of mists and clouds flashed with a terrifying angry aura, a kind of strong deterrence force that gave a person feelings of reverence and fright.

Now, everyone was nervously staring at that round ball of cloud and mist. Su Luo’s expression was even more serious and grave.

Not long after, the clouds and mists slowly dispersed.

An entirely pink-colored little divine dragon appeared in front of everyone.

Chapter 693 – God descending from heaven to subdue (9)

The little divine dragon opened his eyes, the first one he saw happened to be Li Aoqiong.

Seeing him, he immediately recalled the things he did to Little Master.

An expression of wanting to vent his anger flashed through the little divine dragon's eyes. He lifted his paw and with a 'pow' sound, smashed it towards Li Aoqiong's forehead!

The sharp claws not only scratched up Li Aoqiong's face, even more, it slapped his body until it flipped over heavily in place.

Su Luo was so startled that her chin nearly hit the floor.

Before, the little divine dragon had just entered the sixth rank, now, all of a sudden, he could make Li Aoqiong flip over from a hit. What level was this?

But, when she looked at Li Aoqiong again, Su Luo understood completely.

Currently, Li Aoqiong had a large part of his spirit energy released by Grandmaster Rong Yun, in fact, his strength was already less than fourth rank.

From a grand and majestic ninth rank falling until fourth rank, it felt no different than falling from heaven and into hell.

Seeing him appearing in such a difficult situation, the stifled emotions Su Luo felt before from being chased and killed lessened a little.

Once again, she saw that the little divine dragon's strength had suddenly gotten stronger, and that last bit of sullenness changed into excitement.

Su Luo happily hugged the little divine dragon, tapping his little head: "Hey,

changed back to your original form oh, now, how strong are you?”

“Master, master, I’m already seventh rank!” The little divine dragon’s voice, carrying a touch of being pleased with himself, echoed in Su Luo’s mind.

“You are more accomplished when compared to your family’s Master.” Su Luo patted his little head.

If they were to really compare, Su Luo was filled with all kinds of envy and jealousy.

So the saying goes, reincarnating was also a skill, luck should be considered a part of that strength.

Because of the natural superiority of the gifted dragon race, the little divine dragon completely did not need to cultivate. What he ought to eat, drink and sleep, he does, after that, he could still absorb a villain’s spirit energy and make it his own to use. Not being careful and he directly flew to the seventh rank.

She, in contrast, was being chased to be killed everywhere. Time after time, she had to take great risks. After suffering untold hardship and efforts, today she had only reached the fifth rank.

This comparison would result in a handful of miserable tears.

The little divine dragon had no idea of his master’s thoughts. He just stuck out his little butt, standing in Su Luo’s embrace. His moist little pink tongue was licking her red swollen neck.

After being licked by the little divine dragon, Su Luo had a clear, cool and refreshing feeling. When she touched it again, that red swollen mark had unexpectedly completely disappeared.

As for Li Aoqiong.

His entire face was bloody, staggering along, he crawled up.

With only one glance, he saw the little divine dragon in Su Luo’s embrace that had a perplexed and adorable expression.

It really was a little divine dragon and not a puppy!

“It, it, it....” The finger Li Aoqiong used to point at the little divine dragon

trembled non-stop, his face was full of shock.

Just seeing him, the little divine dragon was annoyed!

Consequently, not waiting for Su Luo to make a move, the little divine dragon leaped out of her embrace and took aim at Li Aoqiong's chest.

“Slap, slap, slap, slap, slap, slap——”

Continuously slamming him six times with his fists, each of the hit was capable of smashing him into spitting out blood.

The little divine dragon's type of behavior was clearly learned from Grandmaster Rong Yun's actions before.

Now, Grandmaster Rong Yun was looking at the little divine dragon, that pair of always coldly indifferent eyes flashed with a trace of warmth.

His hands beckoned towards the little divine dragon.

The little divine dragon slanted his head, sizing him up for a moment.

Maybe he felt the spirit energy on his body was pure and comfortable, therefore, the little divine dragon hesitated for a second before letting go of his little legs and hopped onto his body.

Grandmaster Rong Yun's mood seemed to be pretty good.

The Grand master Rong Yun who was always not lax with his words or smile, unexpectedly, a shallow of an arc formed at the corner of his mouth.

Even though in a flash it passed, but this was also enough to shock everyone present.

Almost everyone was guessing, what kind of relationship did Grandmaster Rong Yun have with the little divine dragon.

Beichen Ying was even more envious as he slapped Su Luo's shoulder: “The hard times are over, with the good times just beginning.”

Lan Xuan also slapped Su Luo's other shoulder: “Finally watched until the clouds had parted and we can see the light of the moon.”

Anye Ming pursed his lips and smiled: “Congratulations, congratulations.”

“What is the congratulations for?” Su Luo still hadn’t realized it yet.

Chapter 694 – The grieving Li family (1)

Beichen Ying's pair of clear and monochrome eyes were huge and had a lively expression. In high spirits, he watched Su Luo with a smile on his face.

“Grandmaster Rong Yun's conduct is normally cold and indifferent, usually, seeing someone dying, he won't save them. But this time, he actually saved you, don't tell me this isn't a matter to celebrate?”

Anye Ming smilingly added: “This time, Grandmaster Rong Yun made a move to save you, in other people's eyes, Grandmaster Rong Yun would seem like your backer. In the future, no one in the imperial capital would dare to provoke you.”

Su Luo tossed her skeptical gaze onto Grandmaster Rong Yun's body.

And at this moment, Grandmaster Rong Yun's gaze just so happened to sweep by her body. When their gazes collided, Grandmaster Rong Yun's gaze was as tranquil as water, without a ripple nor a swell. It was as if in his eyes, Su Luo was merely a wooden stake.

Su Luo had no choice but to concede, this time, the reason why Grandmaster Rong Yun would save her was all based on giving the little divine dragon some face.

If it was not for the little divine dragon, very likely, even if Grandmaster Rong Yun had seen it, he would have still left indifferently.

Thinking of this, the gaze Su Luo used to look at the little divine dragon became increasingly gentle and kind.

Just at this quiet moment, suddenly, small ripples and fluctuations appeared in the atmosphere.

Li Yaoxiang's figure slowly appeared before everyone's eyes.

When he appeared at first glance, he saw Li Aoqiong who had fallen to the

ground, appearing battered and exhausted.

Seeing Li Aoqiong's this kind of appearance, Li Yaoxiang's face pursed tightly, his complexion hazed over.

"Second Uncle!" Li Aoqiong covered his chest and could not help but cough.

Today, with regards to Li Aoqiong, was truly a complicated day.

First was the coincidental chance to be promoted to ninth rank, just at the most ecstatic moment of his life, he was lowered to the fourth rank by Grandmaster Rong Yun, falling into a quagmire.

In the course of these events, he had to endure being beaten up time and time again.

If it was not for the fact that Li Aoqiong's body was basically strong enough, right now, he would already have become a pile of mincemeat. Where would he still have the time to complain to Li Yaoxiang?

"Second Uncle, save me! Cough, cough, cough——" The seriously injured Li Aoqiong saw his own relative, he couldn't breathe and gave burst after burst of violent coughs.

"What is going on? Who had injured you like this?!" Li Yaoxiang was infuriated till the point he nearly went mad!

When he and Beichen family's damned old man was fighting, he had paid attention to this treasured nephew!

That was from seventh rank and directly whirled to the ninth rank ah!

But now, he was only at a lowly fourth rank, weaker than Su Luo, that loathsome girl, how was this okay?

Grandmaster Rong Yun cast him an indifferent glance, and with a gentle tone of voice that was full of a cold murderous aura: "Me."

Li Yaoxiang turned around, in the split second he saw Grandmaster Rong Yun, his entire body trembled slightly.

"Rong, Grandmaster Rong Yun?" Grandmaster Rong Yun, as an honored senior and noble character, came to Eastern Ling empire and still interfered in the fight

among the younger generations?

Grandmaster Rong Yun's expression was indifferent: "The Jade Lake's Li family tried to cause a war between humans and the dragon race. Go back and ask Li Canglan what is the meaning of this?"

Li Canglan was the name of Li family's elder. Normally, people would call him saint or honored sir, nearly almost everyone had forgotten his original name.

Having heard what was said, Li Yaoxiang's entire body jolted to a stop.

Cause human and dragon race conflict? This accusation was too great! How could Li family bear such an accusation?

Seeing Li Aoqiong who had fallen to the ground and now changed into fourth rank, a touch of pain flashed through Li Yaoxiang's eyes.

Whether Li Aotian was dead or alive was still undetermined, now, Li Aoqiong had changed into this kind of appearance...

Originally, he was already at ninth rank, now, he was turned into fourth rank. Moreover, in the future, it would be more difficult for him to cultivate higher! Thinking of this, a burning rage started to spread from Li Yaoxiang's chest.

His sinister and very cruel gaze ruthlessly glared at Su Luo. That fierceness burst out from his gaze, wishing he could choke Su Luo to death on the spot.

Chapter 695 – The grieving Li family (2)

Su Luo, without showing any weakness, welcomed his gaze, the corner of her mouth hooking into a cynical and mocking smile.

Blaming her? This they cannot blame her for.

Li Yaoxiang's hands were clenched into fists at his side, making cracking sounds.

“Grandmaster Rong Yun is only protecting that little divine dragon, right?” Li Yaoxiang bit down on his back teeth, asking while stressing each syllable.

He could not do anything to Grandmaster Rong Yun, but don't tell him that he couldn't do anything to a lowly little loathsome girl?

Unexpectedly, before Grandmaster Rong Yun could open his mouth, the little divine dragon had already flown out of Su Luo's embrace. Like a launched rocket, he rushed towards Li Yaoxiang.

Frankly speaking, the little divine dragon right now was like the great general Lu Meng, a model of self-improvement.

Before, the little divine dragon was already promoted one level, in addition, he had absorbed Li Aoqiong's spirit energy and was again promoted a level. Now, he was already at the seventh rank!

Again, on top of the fact that magical beasts were generally somewhat stronger than humans, therefore, even faced with the eighth ranked Li Yaoxiang, he also wouldn't be standing downwind!

The little divine dragon's speed was extremely fast, like lightning, he leaped out. All of a sudden, he had bitten Li Yaoxiang's trouser leg, with a 'whoosh' sound, he directly bore into his pants!

“Pfft——” Seeing this comical scene, Beichen Ying couldn't help but utter a

sound of laughter.

Lan Xuan and other people of the group, with arms around each other's shoulders stood in a circle. Every one of them started to laugh heartily.

Su Luo also watched the spectacle in front of her eyes with a face full of interest.

She believed that having been promoted two levels in a row, now, with the little divine dragon already restored to his original form, was absolutely not something Li Yaoxiang could grab.

As Su Luo expected, the little divine dragon was extremely nimble.

The little divine dragon was originally a small round ball, his speed after running into Li Yaoxiang's trouser leg still did not slow down. He followed along the gaps and got into everywhere.

How could Li Yaoxiang have anticipated that the little divine dragon who originally would have collapsed at the first blow in front of him, would become this strong in the blink of an eye.

In a moment of distraction, he grabbed at empty air where the little divine dragon was, but wanting to capture him again was going to be more difficult.

Seeing the little divine dragon drilling everywhere in his trousers, and no matter what, he couldn't capture it, Li Yaoxiang was so mad that his face turned red.

Under so many eyes, he, as the stately Second Master of the Jade Lake's Palace, was made fun of and put into an awkward position. How could you ask him to endure it!

"Go die!" He slapped ruthlessly towards the little divine dragon on his thigh!

However, in the end, he still underestimated the little divine dragon's speed. It was to the extent that after one palm strike slapped down, the little thing had already vanished long ago, whereas Li Yaoxiang's slap which contained formidable spirit energy, struck his own thigh.

"Hisss—"

Even he, as an eighth-ranked expert, could not bear it and had to suck in a cold breath of air.

Because it was really painful, he nearly slapped his own bones until they rend apart.

The rage in Li Yaoxiang's eyes was already at the border of a sudden explosion. As for the little divine dragon now, where was he?

He was at the place with Li Yaoxiang's root, not far from the thigh area.

The little divine dragon was furious that Li Yaoxiang would bully his own Little Master. As a result, he aimed at the softest and weakest spot on Li Yaoxiang's body, and directly bit down!

However, after this bite directly descended, the little divine dragon's little head slanted to the side, a perplexed and puzzled expression appearing in his eyes.

Huh, why is it empty?

During the time when the little divine dragon was staring blankly, Li Yaoxiang hardened his heart and directly slapped towards his own crotch. It would absolutely hit its target.

Just now, the lesson he learned had just passed, Li Yaoxiang was afraid, therefore, he didn't dare.

Now, from the outside, it seemed the little divine dragon's little round body was standing in that place of his. It seemed very comical with that bulge.

Li Yaoxiang was anxious as well as furious, and he also dared not use his strength to slap there. Consequently, he could only reach out his hands to make a grab.

But, just when his hands were about to touch this round little thing, a scene that astonished everyone occurred.

Because he sensed danger approaching, the little divine dragon panicked and randomly selected a path that actually ripped apart the clothing covering Li Yaoxiang's private part. His little body shot out and directly jumped on top of his head.

Chapter 696 – The grieving Li family (3)

“Sss——” Everyone present at the scene all inhaled a deep breath of cold air.

Beichen Ying showed his approval even more by giving the little divine dragon a thumbs up!

Never thought that this little thing was this capable, to actually directly rip apart the pants of the Second Master of the Jade Lake’s Palace!

In such a public place with numerous people, Li Yaoxiang’s pants were fine everywhere else, only that place was missing a small piece of cloth.

Li Yaoxiang subconsciously had both hands covering that place, his expression had a touch of panic and embarrassment.

In this way, his action was even more conspicuous and comically funny.

When everyone saw this, without exception, all of them started to laugh uproariously.

Li Yaoxiang originally wanted to angrily rebuke them, but the heavens did not want to help him. Because the little divine dragon’s playful nature appeared again, and actually stepped on his head again and again.

In the beginning, he was still taking strides to walk, but afterwards, he felt the difficulty was too low. So, he went as far as to play a game by himself of jumping really high and again dropping down from very high.

Every time he smashed down, Li Yaoxiang felt a violent jolt on his forehead.

Li Yaoxiang, in a stern voice, cursed at Su Luo: “Loathsome girl! Quickly grab this little dragon away! Otherwise, this elder will be impolite to it!”

Li Yaoxiang’s hateful words were said with a severe tone, but lacked sufficient confidence. Because he could not do anything about the little divine dragon,

then, how could he even threaten Su Luo?

He just hoped that Su Luo would not be that smart, but his hope was doomed to come to nothing.

Su Luo was smiling happily as she looked at him: “Not treating him politely? Then, you should by all means not be polite.”

The little divine dragon’s strength was already very different now. With regards to a real fight, he would not win against Li Yaoxiang. But, when comparing speed and quickness, then, Li Yaoxiang would be defeated.

Therefore, Su Luo was extremely certain, Li Yaoxiang basically could not deal with the little divine dragon. If he was able to deal with the little divine dragon, then, he wouldn’t shout at Su Luo. Rather, he would directly make his move.

Li Yaoxiang’s face was patches of red, so furious that he nearly passed out.

This hateful thing, he will kill it if it’s the last thing he does!

Just when the little divine dragon was about to drop down from up high onto his forehead, he started to condense his spirit energy and grabbed towards the little divine dragon’s position. He believed with his entire heart that this time, even if he didn’t capture the little divine dragon, he would at least pull off some of his scales!

However, his luck was just not that good.

He could have grabbed for wherever, but he actually stuck his hand towards the little divine dragon’s mouth.

It must be said that the little divine dragon’s claws and teeth, were sharper than any weapons made of mysterious iron!

“Ahhh!!!” Li Yaoxiang, with bad luck, that finger was directly bitten off by the little divine dragon.

The little divine dragon was disdainful that it didn’t smell good.

“Pooh——” sound, that finger was spit onto his body.

Li Yaoxiang was simply about to go mad!

He unconsciously reached out with his other hand to grab at the little divine

dragon. Now, his reasoning was already covered over by rage.

Consequently, when his hand released where it was covering his crotch—

Many people at the scene all gave a shriek.

Among them, Beichen Ying's reaction was the most adorable.

In the split second, when he saw the truth, both of his hands covered his mouth. He raised his voice, loud and clear. Using a shouting tone, he madly yelled: "Ah! Eunuch! The Second Master of the Jade Lake's Palace is actually an eunuch!!!"

"Pfft—" Lan Xuan could not stand it any longer, he started to laugh with 'pfft' sounds. He pulled at Beichen Ying's sleeves, "Lighten it a bit, you overreacted."

"Then you do it." Beichen Ying disdainfully handed over this heavy responsibility to Lan Xuan.

Lan Xuan raised his chin, having an expression that said 'you watch this'.

One could only see Lan Xuan's hand forming a horn shape around his mouth. He shouted towards Li Yaoxiang, full of concern: "Uncle Li, your family's little man was bitten off by a puppy and fell to the ground!"

As a result, everyone's gaze, with a swishing sound, simultaneously looked towards that bloody and badly mangled finger that the little divine dragon had bitten off.

Chapter 697 – The grieving Li family (4)

“So small...” Anye Ming muttered.

Even though it was a mutter, the volume was loud enough for Li Yaoxiang to hear.

The little divine dragon sat on Li Yaoxiang’s head that was like a chicken’s nest. Two small claws grabbed onto that head which was as disorderly as weeds.

Two clear and limp pair of large eyes, with a perplexed and innocent expression, watched these people who were slapping their thighs, howling with laughter and shouting wildly.

He completely did not understand the mishap he had made.

The human world was really complicated... he does not understand. The little divine dragon pursed his small mouth. That listlessly small appearance was simply too adorable.

At this time, Li Yaoxiang had already gone mad with anger!

Being made fun of by the little divine dragon in front of the younger generation, he was already on the verge of suddenly exploding. Combined with what the little divine dragon did, made him expose a secret he had kept hidden for countless years in front of everyone.

In order to hide this secret, he even took a wife to cover it up. But now, everything was ruined!

This put him in one of those crazily insane moods.

“Ah ah ah ah ah ah!!!!” Li Yaoxiang was so mad that he began wildly grabbing at his own head.

Since it had already been exposed, he just let it all go. He did not need to care

about there being nothing there anymore!

Li Yaoxiang simply went mad. His hands were wildly grabbing at his head, but what's the use? It's not as if the little divine dragon was a statue, standing there and letting him grab.

Way before he had started doing that, the nimble little thing had already drifted down to his back.

But being in a state of madness, Li Yaoxiang was completely unaware. He was only seen to continuously grab at his own head.

One grab was a bundle of hair.

Even the skin with the hair was pulled down. Clumps of bloody flesh and black hair, the sight seemed eerie and frightening.

The smile in Su Luo's and other's eyes gradually froze. Their expression seemed to become somewhat grave.

“Ah ah ah ah ah—” A bellow exploded from Li Yaoxiang's mouth. The entire heaven and earth shook for a moment.

Li Yaoxiang suddenly became quiet.

His lowered eyes suddenly bubbled up and exploded with red, rays of rage shooting towards Su Luo.

He was seen heading towards Su Luo one step at a time, walking there slowly.

His whole body appeared murderous, inciting fear in the hearts of people.

Just at this moment, the little divine dragon's sharp claws clenched into a fist as he heavily smashed down on Li Yaoxiang's head.

The red glow in Li Yaoxiang's eyes gradually waned.... His eyes assumed the shape of a hypnotic spiral (1), slowly falling to the ground.

Su Luo resolutely wiped away the sweat on her forehead.

The Li Yaoxiang in a crazy state was simply too terrifying. Fortunately, the little divine dragon attacked with a heavy fist at the last moment.

After knocking Li Yaoxiang out, the little divine dragon flew towards Su Luo in high spirits with his little face slanted up proudly.

“Awoo, awoo~~” The little divine dragon patted his chest, showing he did well and seeking praise from the Little Master.

“My family’s little dragon is still the greatest!” Su Luo smiled from ear to ear as she rubbed his head.

The little divine dragon loved this kind of spoiling and pampering move by Su Luo the most.

His two little claws grabbed onto the hem of her clothes and shyly buried his head in her bosom, digging around with his nose.

Su Luo could not help but let out a laugh.

The little divine dragon had a strength comparable to Li Xiaoyang, but with such a shy appearance, who would believe it if this was said out loud?

Don’t know when he would finally grow up.

Beichen Ying moved closer to Su Luo, that sunshine-filled, handsome face was full of smiles. His two canine teeth were shining brightly: “Sister-in-law, you’re really quite something! You can even raise a puppy into a little dragon!”

Lan Xuan also moved in closer, his pair of eyes releasing beams of light: “Where did you catch it? Is there more? Bring us to go catch one as well~~~”

Even though Anye Ming did not say anything, but his naked gaze also expressed a feeling of ardent hope and expectation.

Without waiting for Su Luo to answer, Beichen Ying already slapped Lan Xuan on the head: “This is a dragon, not a dog. Is it something that you can just casually pick up as you please?”

*1) **hypnotic spiral**: The Chinese is translate into **mosquito incense coil**, which the Chinese lit to get rid of mosquitos. The incense is in the shape of a hypnotic spiral so I just used the more common English name for the shape in case people haven’t seen the Chinese mosquito incense. So if you see hypnotic spiral then the Chinese is mosquito incense coil.*

Chapter 698 – The grieving Li family (5)

After he had finished speaking, Beichen Ying smiled flatteringly at Su Luo: “Sister-in-law, can you let me hold him for a while?” Those adorable huge eyes that were bright and intelligent -too cute, too adorable.

However, without waiting for Beichen Ying’s hand to get closer to the little divine dragon, the little divine dragon had already turned his body around. He presented his butt to face Beichen Ying while his little head dug into Su Luo’s bosom.

Thus expressing his disdain for Beichen Ying.

Lan Xuan, with a ‘pfft’ burst out in loud laughter, “A person whose moral standing is too poor, move away. Watch me!”

However, before Lan Xuan’s body could get close, he was already swept away by the little divine dragon’s tail.

Deng deng deng— —

Lan Xuan, who was completely unguarded against it, took a few steps back in succession. In the end, his butt ended up sitting on the ground.

“Hey, this small thing, its temper really isn’t that small.” Lan Xuan patted his butt as he stood back up. He pointed his finger at the little divine dragon while shouting his grievances in dissatisfaction.

Su Luo shot an unhappy glance at them, “The little divine dragon is timid. Wait for him to get more familiar with you, then he’ll be fine.”

Normally so shy, yet in a battle, he would advance bravely. Normal days, he looked like an ornamental and spoiled pet. When it was time to battle, he was a fighting spirit pet. It really was one move with two gains, there was nothing more suitable than this.

“Eh, Grandmaster Rong Yun has disappeared?” Beichen Ying was the first to realise this situation.

Anye Ming laughed bitterly as he rubbed his nose and then pointed at Li Yaoxiang: “When he fainted, then Grandmaster Rong Yun left.”

Su Luo secretly guessed in her heart.

Such an indecent thing and Grandmaster Rong Yun had seen it from start to finish, but he only left when Li Yaoxiang fainted.

Was it because when he saw Li Yaoxiang passed out, knowing he would not be a threat to the little divine dragon, therefore, he left feeling at ease?

Looked like Grandmaster Rong Yun really cared for the little divine dragon.

But, fortunately, he did not snatch the little divine dragon away from her hands.

If he wanted to snatch the little divine dragon, it should be easy. Su Luo was basically powerless to stop him.

Su Luo stroked the little divine dragon’s head, “Your family’s Master definitely saved the world in her past life. Otherwise, how is it that my luck is so good. Just so happens to pick up a little treasure like you.”

During leisure periods, the little divine dragon acted like an ornamental pet, cute and stupidly adorable.

During battles, it can act like a fighting spirit pet, having incomparably valiant fighting strength.

Moreover, the little divine dragon also had such a strong background that provided Su Luo with conveniences, time and time again.

The little divine dragon looked at Su Luo perplexedly and innocently: he could not understand what was said...

Su Luo and the others from the same group were leisurely, but the fury in Li Aoqiong’s eyes surged up even more because of this.

However, in this situation where the enemy was strong and he was weak, he could only grin and bear it, shrinking the feeling of his own existence as much as

possible.

So he did not say a word, and even deliberately slowed down his own breathing. He made himself as thin as air, hoping Su Luo would ignore his existence.

Elder Beichen was standing afar. At this time, he was stroking his few strands of goat beard. With a smile in his eyes, clearly, he was in a rather good mood.

That's right. An old rival for many years. Now, to unexpectedly see him in such a shameful manner, how could he not be happy?

A moment ago, Beichen Ying and those children did not see clearly, but he saw it very clearly.

Even though the little divine dragon's small fist had strength, it would not go as far as to knock out Li Yaoxiang who was in a crazed state of mind.

When the little divine dragon raised his small fist, Grandmaster Rong Yun's sleeve moved slightly. It was only after that, did Li Yaoxiang pass out.

Moreover, before Grandmaster Rong Yun left, that apathetic glance he threw over was clearly to warn him to keep silent.

Elder Beichen couldn't help but let out a sigh.

On this continent, how many strong experts had tried to get close to Grandmaster Rong Yun but could not. But right now, this little divine dragon made Grandmaster Rong Yun go as far as to protect him.

Among these... what's the reason?

That day, Su Luo and the group of people left voluntarily.

Chapter 699 – The grieving Li family (6)

Li Aoqiong, who was pretending to be an ostrich, waited until after all of them had left. Only then did he return to the Li family's home in the imperial capital while carrying Li Yaoxiang on his back.

After he returned, Li Aoqiong decided it was an important matter that must be kept secret and would not say a single word.

Li Yaoxiang was even more eager to treat that day's matter as garbage to be expunged. Naturally, he would not bring it up again.

Even if they did not want to mention it, but others could not help it.

How could Beichen Ying and that group of lively children be capable of enduring the silence in order to keep this secret?

After they returned, not only did they spread it, but they also helped to publicize the Li family's secret without restraint!

The most important point was to publicize Li Yaoxiang's being completely empty in that place.

For a period of time, almost the entire imperial capital had flared up.

Li Yaoxiang, that was Jade Lake's Li family's Second Master, whose existence was so high up. who would have imagined he was actually.....

“Oh, heavens. Did you know? Jade Lake's Li family's Second Master is actually... Hey, I'll just only tell you, you better not tell anyone else.”

“That's right, that's right. Did you know? Jade Lake's Li family's Second Master is actually... Hey, I'll just tell you alone, you must never tell it to anyone else.”

“Unexpectedly, the man in the Jade Lake's Li family is an eunuch. I've heard that place really wasn't capable... Hey, I'll just tell you alone, don't spread it

around.”

“Have you heard it yet? It’s being said that the Jade Lake’s Li family’s next generation are not their biological children. They were adopted because that Master is an eunuch and can’t have kids. Hey, I’ll just tell you alone, don’t spread it around.”

“Hey, I’ll just tell you alone, don’t spread it around...”

Everyone warned others not to talk about it, but they themselves had their own friends and family. How could this sort of world-shaking gossip be kept inside? If they did not talk about it, their whole body would feel uncomfortable.

Hence, everyone all stated not to tell anyone else, yet they themselves would secretly tell others.

This kind of gossip was like a rolling snowball – the more it rolled, the bigger it became. In less than an afternoon’s effort, it was completely well-known by everyone in the imperial capital, even the food market’s expert, the raggedly-clothed beggars, the unskilled laborers on the dock.....

The oldest being a seventy-year-old elderly woman and the youngest was a three-year-old child. Everyone knew the Second Master in the Jade Lake’s Li family, Li Yaoxiang, was actually a damned eunuch!!!

When the Jade Lake’s Li family returned to their senses, they were already powerless to reverse this desperate situation.

They were so furious, they nearly passed out.

Flustered and exasperated, the Jade Lake’s Li family went to find Emperor Jing and requested him to issue an imperial edict to deal with these gossipers.

However, the always remote and aloof Jade Lake’s Li family, had quite clearly always used prestige to intimidate those beneath them. To deal with these sorts of gossiping matters, clearly in the area of public relations, it seemed they were rather incapable. They only knew how to use military force to suppress.

However, this sort of gossip-like rumours and slanders, the more it was repressed, the more it would rebound. After all, the mouths were grown on the bodies of others.

Emperor Jing also wanted to help, but he was also less than capable to deal with it.

Because fellow countrymen's love for gossip was rooted in their innate nature. How could this be changed by an imperial edict?

The sages had already said it before, rumours could only be stopped by a wise man, forceful methods will not be able to stop it.

Consequently, the more the imperial court tried to stop it, the crazier the populace's secret discussions on this became.

First, it was spread around that Li Yaoxiang was a damn eunuch, after being passed around, it became Li Yaoxiang had an adulterous relationship with his sister-in-law. Consequently, he was castrated by Jade Lake's number one Master. Until later it emerged with the conclusion that Li Aoqiong, Li Yaoyao, and so on, were not given birth by the Jade Lake's number one Master...

The populace's craving for gossip, was like a raging flame.

Of course, among these, naturally, Beichen Ying and friends could not be left out in adding fuel to the fire.

Seeing a servant come holding the report about the latest rumor, Beichen Ying covered his belly and rolled about on his bed.

Chapter 700 – The grieving Li family (7)

“Hahahahaha, it hurts so much I could die, quickly save me.” Beichen Ying laughed until even tears came out, “You guys go quickly, continue spreading it. This time, spread around about the Jade Lake’s Palace Master’s wife’s lover!”

Watching the servants go after accepting his order, Beichen Ying finished laughing and slowly wiped away the wet spot made by the tears.

Only after Beichen Ying took a few deep breaths did he calm down.

That day, Li Aoqiong chased them until they looked disheveled and downtrodden, especially Luoluo, who almost died by his hands. This sort of hatred, how could he not take revenge?

The moment he thought of that day’s scene where Su Luo’s neck was being gripped so forcefully, a hint of malicious ruthlessness flashed across Beichen Ying’s usually sunshine-filled handsome face.

Those rumours were completely planned and executed by Beichen Ying and his group of people, Su Luo did not actually participate in it.

When she woke up, she found that the rumors outside were already like this.

However, the Jade Lake’s Palace wasn’t entirely without countermeasures. At least, with the Jade Lake’s fairy taking action, these rumours were suppressed very quickly.

The news of Grandmaster Rong Yun arriving at the imperial capital was actually released by Li Yaoyao.

At the same time of releasing this piece of news, she also spread around the matter of Grandmaster Rong Yun about to take Li Yaoyao as a disciple being the most important and high-profile point.

Li Yaoyao was deeply well-versed in the weaknesses of gossiping rumours.

Gossiped rumours had a time of effectiveness and if there was something that had even more explosive interest, then the previous rumour would be drowned out.

So, when the news about Grandmaster Rong Yun wanting to accept Li Yaoyao as a disciple spread, the entire imperial capital was stunned.

It was not just the entire imperial capital, even the entire Eastern Ling and the entire continent's strong experts were all simultaneously stunned.

Grandmaster Rong Yun, until now, only had Leng Yan as his only disciple.

If Jade Lake's fairy paid her respects to Grandmaster Rong Yun as a disciple, then Jade Lake's Palace's ranking among the ten largest aristocratic families would inevitably lean near the front once more.

For a period of time, almost all eyes were focused on Eastern Ling Empire's imperial capital, taking note of every movement there.

Rather, during these few days, the depressing atmosphere that the Jade Lake's Li family had a few days before became the total opposite – a lively and prosperous scene decorated with lanterns and coloured banners.

Jade Lake's Li family was in high energy, while inside the Su home, it was quiet. Inside the study.

Su Zian was sitting upright at the side of the desk, his brows furrowed.

He looked at the envelope in his hands. His complexion was suddenly dark and gloomy, clouded with uncertainty.

In fact, this letter had already reached his hands a few days ago. At the time, the one who had delivered the letter was a Jade Lake's inner disciple.

Their attitude had been just as arrogant and disdainful as before.

However, at the time, after the letter was delivered, the imperial capital very quickly surged up with crazy rumors about Jade Lake's Li family's scandal.

At the time, Su Zian could not help but rejoice in someone else's misfortune in his heart. So, he naturally shelved this letter into a corner.

However, a millennium old aristocratic family proved itself to be a millennium

old aristocratic family. Their inside information was deep, definitely not a family that could be taken down by something small-scale done once or twice.

The moment Li Yaoyao pays respects to Grandmaster Rong Yun as his disciple, under this sky, who would dare to gossip indiscriminately about them?

So, Su Zian, who began to feel even more pressure, pulled out the letter from the deepest parts of the drawer and brought it out once more.

The content of this letter was very simple. There were only a few strokes, very simply, a single line.

Have Su Luo banished from the Su Manor!

Yes, it was just these simple eight words.

However, these eight words landed Su Zian in a profoundly difficult situation.

If it had been half a year ago, when this letter from the Jade Lake's Li family had arrived without even being said, Su Zian would comply with the request. He wouldn't even be a little bit hesitant and sad about it.

However, now, the situation was not so simple.

Firstly, not even mentioning how in this past half a year, Su Luo, that smelly girl's, strength had advanced by leaps and bounds. Just speaking of her relationship with His Highness Prince Jin.

Just this point alone, he could not bear to let her go.

However, if he did not obey Jade Lake's Li family... A hint of haze flashed across Su Zian's eyes.

What to do? Just exactly what should he do that would be the best choice for him and for Su Manor?

Su Zian sank into deep tangled thoughts.

This day, Grandmaster Rong Yan complied with Emperor Jing's invitation for him to enter the palace.

And astonishingly, accompanying by his side happened to be the Jade Lake's fairy.